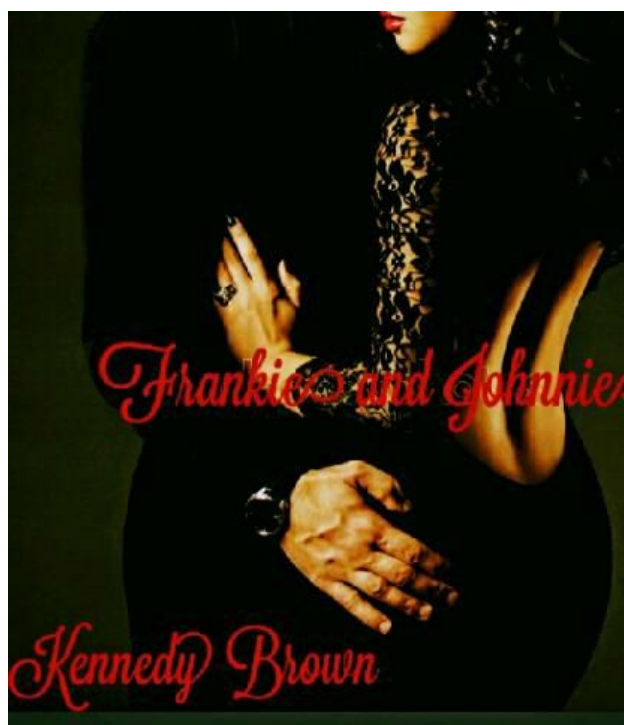


Love Will Find A Way



Dedicated To All Steel Magnolias!
(Strong Women)



Copyright© 2017 by EmmaParaLee,Inc
Published By EmmaParaLee Inc/Marie68 publishing

Join Mailing List
samcookefan68@[gmail.com/Kennedyluvssam@yahoo.com](mailto:samcookefan68@gmail.com/Kennedyluvssam@yahoo.com)

Author: Kennedy Brown

All Rights Reserved by Author,In conjunction with Deirdre A.Mack

This novel is a work of Fiction,Any Resemblance to actual events,persons living or dead, Organizations ,Establishments are purely coincidental

This is a fiction novel based solely on Author's imagination.

Cover : ZayDay Photos

Edited By EmmaParaLee,Inc.Copyright© 2016 by EmmaParaLee,Inc

Published By EmmaParaLee Inc/Marie68 publishing

Join Mailing List

samcookefan68@[gmail.com](mailto:samcookefan68@gmail.com)/Kennedyluvssam@yahoo.com

Francesca (Frankie) Richards

Chapter 1

SOMEBODY HAVE MERCY!

It is past 3 a.m and My in house and once again My husband Johnnie,is a no show,And I Am sitting here mad as hell,But after living with a man for seven years before He marries You,And only then it is because of the law stating,Spouses can't testify against each other,That and only the Lord looking out for Johnnie,He managed to evade going to prison on a drug

charge,And truth be told,He should have been acquitted,After all He was a mere runner,It was his brother,Emilio who was the one with the street cred,And the money to go with it.

I work as the manager,Of Paralee's Soul Food Cafe,Which was owned by My Paternal grandparents,Who have gone onto their glory,And if I had a dollar to give to everyone who asks Me,Why didn't I give Johnnie,a job....Forget that!...Tell Yo Mama to give his ass a job and see how quickly stock...

And merchandise would plummet,And then We will talk.The only good thing to come from Johnnie,are ,Asharay,Trinity,and J.J..His children,And yes,He had them by another woman,Who is living HER life with her new man,Some baller...Who is obviously on a budget,since She could not depend on Him to support or accept Her children, Like I accepted Hers with open arms,And all three were conceived during My marriage to Johnnie,Yeah..I'm that Tina Turner Fool in Love,minus the Ike beatdowns!...Nah a bitch like Myself,The youngest,And only girl with three brothers, A Daddy who loves reliving his Vietnam combat days,And a mother who would beat Booker T,Triple H,or any other champ and make them run home to their Mama,So Other than My self esteem,He has no tko here.I have been cheated and mistreated and I Am tired as Hell of being played,This man has made three babies with a woman who He had been dealing with,And I had no idea until that day three years ago.

I had just gotten off work,At the cafe,And was feeling very up in the clouds,After living together for so long before getting married Johnnie and I were finally eligible to file our income taxes as a joint couple,And being sure that I was the only one to have a key to Our post office box,Due to Johnnie's past two trifling acts of cashing My checks from My side job,Accountant for a swank townhome,Bessarae Condos&Lofts,So with this ring....I changed the key!,I was just spending the anticipated,\$4,253.97 in My head,And all last night after I got the text,that the funds had been loaded,Like a fool I told Him,So with this news He reasoned as stupid became His name,And mine also since I was His wife,He told Me,,,,"Since that money comin'tomorrow. ..Shiiidd....!" I watched and waited to see what He was gonna come out of His mouth with,He dialed his cell phone and began talking""Aye Jo-Jo...We good bruh...Who that talking?...Awww Shit...Peanut...Whaddup witcha dawg?!.....Hell yea...Meet Me at The Game Room!!!!.....Ahhh nigga stop cryin'I got ya on the drinks!"

I am wondering how the hell He was gonna buy drinks off the money which had not yet been received,But when his ass opened the safe and

removed \$650 ,which was our rent money,and was due in two days,It was bad enough with just My salary alone that We were living in a rental property, when We both have good jobs,trouble is Johnnie can never claim a one year record at any job!...But give some Niggas a rope and they swear to be a damn cowboy!.....His reasoning was since Our tax return was being deposited after midnight,We would be straight on the rent..What did I do?..What did I say?..

Not a damn thing,Because it was moot...That fool had shit,showered and shaved,And was gone!....So I just got my bubble bath on and was asleep,With visions of the tax return,Which would be safely secured in My post office box that only I had the key to,The next day...As I went to get the check.....I got gut punched to My financial soul....See,Johnnie married Me for the simple fact ,As I said,Wives can't testify against Husband's...this I knew...What I didn't know is by filing joint taxes,His taxes and all unpaid bills are deducted,Not only was the return deducted the hell out of...There was only \$220.91 ,This is when I found out... I had three stepchildren,That I was unaware of.....That was three years ago,And I had no choice but accept it,Especially,Since My portion helped his ass out,Child Support caught Him up,And had Me dipping into My rainy day account,So Our rent was paid! And this fool had the nerve to expect Me to believe,this random chick named Tiecey,Who housed Emilio's drugs always flirted and every time they would smoke a blunt or drink,She would give Him a knockout pill,And supposedly He woke up once,to an unwanted blow job,And this chick spit the sperm in a cup and used a turkey baster,to impregnate Her three times,....That was bullshit....But somehow after She got that lump of Child Support,She went and got Herself a new wardrobe,And a new man to go along with it,Hence leaving Me right where the story began,I was home one day,relaxing,And I heard a knock on the door,I opened it to find a Fake ass Trap Queen Pen,Dressed in a damn outfit that looked small enough for an eight year old girl,But it made Her look like something thrown away from Goodwill after being rejected by the Salvation Army!....She said"You Ms.Frankie?!"

I told her indeed I was,And I didn't notice the kids at first,But when I did...I invited Her in,She rolled her neck and said"Nah....But kids,say Hey To Ms.Frankie....Ya'll new mama....!"

I was like "What the f....,But saw the kids I dropped the sentence. She spoke"Nah.. .Y'all over here sending lump sums and shit,But not putting in time,Johnnie promised... I gotta do Me,And I want You to tell Johnnie.....I got a man I ain't gotta wake up to go home to a wife.

.....Ohhh....You...didn't know,huh?!...well a gift from Me to You....And consider Yourself paid in full,Having babies for you and shit!’

With that, She turned to leave her three kids,And Me standing there looking stupid....Until the youngest,two year old J.J looked at Me,And said”New Mommie...I'M hungry.....And like that, That fast,I knew these kids would never feel unloved,or unwanted,Even if it meant Johnnie treated Me as if I were his mail order maid...And as for Tiecy...Well one child is worth more than ten mothers...I was ,Mama!,And this is how it has been for the past three years,Of Course,My Parents and brothers felt I was a fool,But they did understand, And treat the children as if they were My biological kids,By birth and once Johnnie and I got the kids settled,He and I had a discussion, And I should have put his ass out then, “Frankie...What were You even thinking letting Tiece leave Her kids here?!.....If I wanted to play Daddy, You and I would have kids of our own!”

I looked at this fool as if He had two heads,a tail and a pitchfork....,”How can You say that?!!!, Those are Your own children, Children that You made outside of our marriage, I accept that, It is not easy, But I accept it....!”

“Frankie... That was your decision, That bitch should not have ev1qeen darkening our damn doorstep...A real bitch ...would have whipped Her ass!”

“Why? Because You fucked up?!....”

“You know what Frankie?...I think I need a break, I mean....You are the equivalent of a video groupie,These hoes ain’t loyal!”

“Up Yo Mammy’s ass with a flag pole!...Me?...I Am the only one loyal to this marriage?... I love those babies,But don't think it does not ache at the situation, But I was raised by a great dad,And devoted brothers, So I could not look into a mirror ,if I turned them away,Because of their Mom,Whom I can tell ,like Her Mammy before Her is as loose as this town’s lips,And You,....Two bit fucking Dad that You are should not be able to hold Your head up,Trifling!”

He looked at Me,And shook His head,...And began scouring the closet,dresser,and beneath the bed,Puzzled,I hissed” Johnnie,What are

you doing?"

"I'm looking for something,... Where the hell is it?!"

"What?...What are You looking for?"

He looked at Me and said "I was looking for Your damn mind?!!!!!"

And even as He talked full on crazy, I noticed His ass was steadily packing, But strangely, I was not opposed to it, At least not yet, I had too much on My mind, wondering How crowded this apartment was, and added children was cluttered enough to do something I Never hoped I had to do, See before I met and married Johnnie, I was engaged, to My high school sweetheart, A guy named Toriko Sentell Styles, He went onto to attend law school, And once He passed the bar, He and I bought the house which, My brother, Tristan now lives, I moved out of it, due to painful memories, a month before We were to be married, He was killed in an automobile accident, Two twelve year old drop shot brats, grand theft auto led to the death of My fiancé, I was five months pregnant at the time, We were so happy, But a month after Ty, was laid to rest, I miscarried, And have never gotten pregnant again, And OB/Gyn, Assured Me that there was no reason why I should not be able to conceive, Ty, was raised by His Grandmother, His parents met the same fate as Ty did, Ty was but three. When His Grandmother passed away two years after Ty and I began dating, He was Her sole beneficiary, Also the sole benefactor of His parents, He was very well off, And sadly, I was now His sole beneficiary, And I have not even touched it until now, Somehow, it felt as if Ty is whispering to Me "FORGET THIS CLOWN....GIVE THOSE KIDS THE LIFE WE WOULD HAVE GIVEN TO OURS!"...I just knew I could give these babies what they deserve, Happiness, A home, Love.

"Ya know what Johnnie?!!!.....Take Ya no good ass on, to lay up and make more outside babies!"

"Naw, got them Trojans.....Ya know damn well I Ain't gonna be with no bitch...I just need to clear My head, And give You time to get Tiecy's BeBe kids up outta here,....You let that ho step to You about Your husband, And turn You into A nanny once removed!, She punked You!.....I will be at Emilio's...But don't be calling or driving by because, Emilio don't like Yo ass like that! "...I will come back when and only when You turn to a DSS

snitch!"

"Johnnie, Just take ya nickel slick bones on, Oh and when Ya get a shocking experience, due to ya damn house arrest monitor, Remember.... You won't have to worry about kids, That is because swallowing a big bulky cellmates seeds, a baby cannot make, I Am not gonna even sweat it.... When and if You decide to come back, Your kids and I won't be here!"

He laughed and said "Damn right, Ya gonna be living on section 8 next door to Mr. Welfare, While you broke and raising Tiecy's kids, And She is living it up!.... On Your old Mommie Dearest shit ...NO WIRE HANGERS EVVVVEERRR!"

He then left Me standing as He slammed the door so hard, it woke Lil J, J..... "Mommie Frankie... I don't like Daddy... You leaving too?" He trembled through his voice....

"No baby... But Mommie, Your sisters, And Yourselfs are going to look for a bigger place to move into!"

I lay back onto My bed, And His lil chunky butt got cozy, and soon We were both asleep, I woke up to see both Asharay, and Trinity standing in the doorway.... "Mommie Frankie?... can We sleep with You?...."

I simply patted the bed and they snuggled up.... Asharay began saying Her prayers, She asked God to watch over Her loved ones, "And God bless Daddy although He is mean....."

Lil J.J cut Her off by saying "summamabitch!". I was shocked " Lil J.J that was bad!.. Do You hear Me?!"

"Yes Mommie Frankie"

But soon I muttered "sumbitch!" _And the four of us laughed until we cried! Loving these babies, And I didn't need Johnnie.... Neither did they!.... Summamabitch!

Chenelle (Nellie) Blye

Chapter 2

Cousin of Mine

It is beyond Me,How Francesca let's Johnnie play Her for a fool...I don't care if He is My cousin, Both He and Emilio, have always been bad news,The only difference is,Johnnie may talk the talk,Emilio walks the whole damn walk,He is truly a member of the Disrespect Yo own Mama ,And slap a bitch when He wants to tribe,And despite His bragard ways, He was no big time dealer,He just had a wife,Who,like Johnnie had Francesca supporting His ass,Then shines as if He is actually a Kingpin,The only difference between Francesca,And Emilio's wife,Katia,is that Katia comes from a home where whatever the man says goes,And once that is clear,All was well,But mildly put,Katia's mother,Syria was the type to believe in heavy hand me down love,As long the heavy hand came down,It was love to Her,So whereas Katia grow tired of Emilio's slapping Her ass,She knew that Her parents felt that She probably deserved it,And would tell Her,You got into that bed,Sleep well in itBottom line, Katia was much like Martha and The Vandellas,Nowhere to Run.

I really felt sorry for Her,Not because of the spousal abuse,That she was stupid enough to put up with,But because She had such low self esteem and even lower esteem when it came to Her parents.Francesca,In My opinion was stupid for no reason,Her parents were way different from from Hal and Syria Bruton,Very different,

They always felt that Francesca needed to dump Johnnie years ago,But She felt like Johnnie just needed to be loved,And trust,He was loved,By each Thot He could get a hold of,And then goes on to make three outside babies,That were recently dumped off on Francesca,And to make matters worse,The mother is his longtime jump off,Who in fact Johnnie could not afford to keep,Mattiesse Cooper,Was hood,But She was materialistic as hell,In fact the charge,Johnnie was busted for Years ago,A semi minor drug charge,One which Francesca was a witness to,Along with three other unsuspecting staff of Paralee's Cafe,were witness to,And as his cousin,I noticed that is around this time when He began wooing the hell out of Francesca, Knowing full well that although She was very smart,And beautiful, She was also going through the loss of Her fiancée, and her unborn baby within weeks of each other,She was vulnerable and needed a man in Her life,Johnnie had fucked up,got caught with drugs,And being dumped by Tiece,He needed a plan,Emilio told Him"Marry that dumb bitch,She saw You doing the drop,wives and husbands can't testify against each other, Tiecey ain't gonna ride for Yo ass...broke anyway!" Johnnie

was only in it,For those reasons only,But they lived together for seven years,before getting married,And that was no accident,He thought the charge had been dropped but,It was reopened,when more evidence was found,So figuring Francesca was the only one who could testify,He married Her,He put a ring on Her finger(Emilio gave Johnnie the wedding set He had bought Katia,Yet He felt She didn't deserve it),And the Spartanburg County Courthouse put a bracelet ,around his ankle....,This is where I come in,I Myself being a clerk of court secretary, I monitor His ass more than the authorities do,It is amazing ,the fact has never dawned on the courthouse has never really noticed,.....Johnnie's monitor never pings whenever it should....I Am not all cousin devoted ,I merely want Francesca to wake up and smell the coffee....And not wind up like Me....Heartbroken, And damn near bankrupt, Behind My no good ass cousin....Who My only brother, Arceneaux,lost His life trying to defend Johnnie,during a beef Johnnie was having over Tiecey Thot ass ,And a drug deal gone wrong,At the hands of Emilio....Yea.....I know Cain killed Abel....But Cousin,Nelly.....wants revenge.....And I Am AND waiting until the law steps in.....,His Eye is on the sparrow....But mine are on getting Emilio and Johnnie's asses,And if I have to use one of their simple minded wives to do so....My best choice would Be on Francesca, But now there are kids involved, And Francesca is raising Her husband and Tiecey's kids....Tiecey would be an added bonus,to My operation,Bring their asses down with a single damn sweep!

Johnnie Walker Richards

Chapter 3

Nobody Wants You,When You're Down and Out Frankie is always doing the damn most,I mean I Am grateful that She holds Me down,But She always seems to dummy shit up before it's all good! Frankie is smart,beautiful, And gullible,I do care for Her,But she is more of a safety net for Me,Had she not been a witness who could put My ass under the jailhouse,...She would not be wearing My last name,She would still be crying,and mourning her late fiancée, And I would still be sprung on Tiecey....But Tiecey was no fool,She would never hold a broke dude down,But She didn't care how

broke I was when she wanted child support, And that was easy, Until I couldn't pay the way I did when I was pushing weight for My brother Emilio, Yea...I admit it, He is the mini kinpin of the two, He is also the fool who gave Me the brotherly advice, Marry Frankie, And Me being the bigger fool took the advice, Hell, I thought Frankie would be as meek and docile, As Emilio had his wife Katia, Under control, At least when He was around Her, When He wasn't, She was a bonafied Ho, And Yea....I can vouch for that, I know , But the commandment says, Thou shalt Not Covet , Neighbor's wife, But since Emilio is My brother, I still have yet to break a commandment, Hell....He wasn't handling his business, What type of dog ass brother would I be to let another dude smash My brother's wife?....Especially when I can do it! Hell truth be told He don't even love Her, It is simply because She is fine, And My brother will walk past a pure beautiful chick, For a Store made thot, And Katia was certainly thot material, She would allow Me to lay up with Tiecey in Her and My brothers home one day, And smile in Frankie's face the next day, All docile and sweet, Because She knew that I would make it up to Her, once the chance became available, Which is why I brought My ass over here while, I get "Me" time, And beating My brothers time with Katia, This is where I felt My brother, Was stupid, I don't give a piece of a damn if His ass was living like a Bowery bum off skidrow, Brother, Daddy, Nephew, or son, No nigga is gonna be under the roof with Frankie, Not even crazy about Lil J.J being there and his ass is just two years old, ShitI don't even want Ashatay, Ashtray.....or Trinity, there either!, And Tiecey was a bitch for dumping them on Me, I know Never trust a big butt and a smile, Especially when the chick has a grill in her mouth that spelled out "Shotta" And let everybody know what her game was, And that was come up...But as soon She realized My pockets were heavy, But the heaviest part belonged in My brother's pockets, She went after Him....He smashed, And passed Her to Me, My stupid ass was hooked, She was just like a video vixen, I was sprung, And she knew it, But also knew She crept back to Emilio, at least three times, So I ain't gonna play daddy when it is a strong possibility that I Am just an uncle!...But truth be told, just let Her put them on Me, I feel although I think He is grimy as fuck, I Am still My brothers keeper, Besides I owe Him, After all....I Am fucking all up on his wife.

Frankie

Chapter 4

God Bless The Child

Asharay is but six years old, But I can already see that Her Whirlpool of a mother, Has Her trained to not only take care of Herself, But four year old Trinity and her two year old brother, J.J as well, Asharay was a very quiet little girl, And tonight as I waited for them to get ready for bed, I had a plan, But I would need My teen neighbor Sonyelle to babysit for awhile. I had gotten a call from Nell, Johnnie's cousin, Who had informed Me that She had a four bedroom Rental, And invited Me to check it out, Although it was just past six p.m it was totally dark, So I agreed, But I know She loves to gossip, And Johnnie must have told Her that I said the kids and I would not be here when or if He tried to come back. The kids and I will have gone on with our lives, But before I could leave Johnnie called Me, Asking if the kids were still with Me, Johnnie was serious as hell, He wanted no part of who were supposed to be his own children!, See this shit is foreign to Me, I have heard of Men who get women pregnant, then just flip, But....this negro here has lost his damn mind, "Johnnie... Look ! You...did this !"

"And I apologized, Now write this number down, Tiecey Mama said she may be able to keep the kids a while, But she want money....And I Ain't got it to spare....So you need to work that out!"

I hung up on his ignorant ass.....

I Am just glad I could meet up with Nell to look over the rental property, She had just recently acquired since Her younger brother was killed, She couldn't bring Herself to sell it, Especially since it paid for, She decided to rent it to Me, But, I knew She was doing it from the kindness of her soul, But She wanted to have some get back against Johnnie, Who she knows both He and Emilio let Her brother die for their sins, And She also knows that I was one the witnesses, And She knows that I too have a shiesty side, That not many can attest to. Truth be told, She really didn't care as much as She wanted Me to think She did, She just knew that by putting Herself in the midst of the situation, It would be a plus one on Her side, And trust.....I was

hip to it....I Myself,Had no..Not one problem just seeing Her ass once a month,And that would be to drop off the money order for the house,Yeah,No cash the hand without a valid receipt,I have known all too well that business and family do not mix,But Nell was cool,But not cool enough to tell My business,Especially when there are plenty of people waiting to tell their versions.

"Girl.....When Katia called and told Me that Tiecey left those kids on your doorstep....I was floored!,But what gets Me....is what the hell were You thinking letting Her leave them on You like that?! "Nell,I put on a Pagliacci clown face,But I Am hurt....these three kids were consumed during My marriage to this doggy cousin of Yours,But it is not their fault, Besides.....,Ty and I always wanted kids?,...."

"Francesca, I guess I get what You are saying,But Ty would not wanting You being made a fool of!....What You gonna do if He has a fourth baby on You? Hell the house You are renting is on Arlington, Not Sesame Street!"

I had to laugh at that one,But She got My ass to thinking...,I knew in My heart that Johnnie only married Me was to keep Me from being eligible to testify against him,I also knew that was My one up card,"Nell..,Johnnie is not stupid.....He wouldn't divorce Me,I can sing like a canary and make him a jailbird for the duration!"

"My point exactly! He would never have put a ring on it it,Had he not felt that You had him in the palm of your hand,But He still cheats on You...I know for a fact..So does Katia.,,.,."

"Katia is so gone on Emilio, That she has nothing better to do than get into My business!..,That trick has not even called,Text,or replied,So I guess She and Emilio let one of Johnnie's Hoes lay up in their house,then smile in My face,? "

"Francesca, You know for a fact Emilio straight does not like You,And what Emilio does not like, Neither does Katia.....at least around Him....But I think She has other reasons for not snitching!"

"Wow,She and Tiecey are close Huh?...."

Nell pulled up at the nice and neat four bedroom home,And shook Her head"Yea....They are close alright.....Just not as close as She and Johnnie!

I didn't even bother getting out of the car,I simply gave Her a cashier's check for \$4500,which covered the deposit, And four months rent....."I will take it!.....How soon can the kids and I move in?!"

She grinned and gave Me a set of keys,And said" Shit....You packed already....You can get it crackin'!"

I Thanked Her,Knowing full well by tomorrow morning Nell will have told everyone that I was like the Jeffersons/And Diff'rent Strokes.....MOVIN ON UP.....WITH MY READY MADE FAMILY.....And as with any other bum ass little man,there is a dumb woman like Myself,Who just let Him move into the place with the kids and I,But to his credit....He gave Me time to set up everything before He,moved back in.....Still ignoring His three kids,And Me

Katia

Chapter 5

Feel It!

It has been a thin slice of Heaven,Having Johnnie staying with Emilio and I,Trust,I love Emilio,But that does not stop Me getting My what started out as revenge sex for Me,Has turned My ass out on My husband's brother,Who always kept Me informed on His brother's fucking around on Me,I thought He was doing it out of genuine concern for Me,His sister in law,But Too late did I realize the real motivated point of it was to get Me into bed,And into My pockets,Yes,I gave Him money,for keeping our secret,But the dummy was His supposed to be Baby Mama,Tiecey,How in

the hell do You get pregnant three times by a married man,The same married man who snuck off and married a random chick while Ya'll was still messing around,Yea,Francesca, was beautiful, and intelligent.....in books but streetwise She was clueless....But truth be told She knew He just married Her to keep Her from testifying against him on some armed robbery shit,I mean just outta nowhere,Date a guy twice ,then marry Him,knowing full well,Had she not held the cards,He would not even tied himself down,But I admit,I Am the one who put the idea of Tiecey revealing Herself to Francesca and the kids which was news to Francesca,I may be a sprung ass chick,But I knew that Tiecey would drop the kids off ,Especially knowing Johnnie was not daddy material, I found this out the hard way,Being His brother was the same way,I will never forget the day I found out I was pregnant four years ago....My stupid ass had no idea if it was My husband's,Emilio or his brother,And like a fool I had believed all the shit Johnnie had promised Me,How together We would find a way to be together,Even if it meant running off with Emilio's money,But I told Johnnie that I was pregnant,I woke up two days later in the ICU at Allen Bennett Memorial Hospital,And My ex, Shane,Who was also a neighbor were laid up in the hospital,He claimed to have been walking His dog and heard a loud thud,He easily opened the unlocked door,And found Me at the bottom of the steps,But to hear Johnnie tell it,He walked in on Shane and Me,arguing with Me,Yelling"WHERE THE HELL IS THE SAFE? With a gun(which was obviously planted on Him) Johnnie claimed to have startled Shane who pushed Me down the staircase,and Johnnie shot Shane three times but ,neither were fatal,Yet serious enough to be hospitalized four weeks,As for Johnnie He was dumbfounded that Shane lived,Sadly,My unborn child did not have that same fortune,stillborn,And to this day....I remember this day well,Because although I was semi conscious,I remember hearing Emilio skidding up to the house.....Johnnie had stood over Me with the same gun,He slid into Shane's hand ,Emilio,burst into the house more concerned for his money and stash,He then proceeded to beat Shane before even calling 911 for Me,One thing was obvious,Emilio was not even concerned at the loss of the baby,And Johnnie made it clear that I had better not mention the truth of what could have been,Yet a low pro hoe ,Tiecey give him babies,That He could give less than a damn about being a daddy.....So when Francesca came along,He got Her dumb ass to marry Him to keep Her from testifying against His ass in court,But As pretty as She is....She is very stupid,Tiecy never left town,She is laying up in this house with Johnnie,He was in on the plan all along ,They wanted to be together for awhile,And Francesca is sitting Home with Johnnie and Tiecy's kids,The two of them are hot and heavy,And I found a bank

statement earlier today, along with receipt, and Francesca's forged signature on an approved loan from World Finance, for. \$15,000 !, \$2,000 of which had been put towards an apartment at Summer Tree.... For Tiecy! I swear these Bitches are so dumb..... And I Am the leader of the pack!

Frankie

Chapter 6

Try A Little Tenderness

Asharay and I were in now what would be Her room, But her little Sister Trinity, Decided that She was gonna sleep in the same room.... It was simply Heartbreaking getting to know the stepchildren I never knew I had until recently, And as the saying goes a child is born with no state of mind, Blind to the ways of mankind, But children are also known to say the darndest things, So as I helped them put away their new clothing (Courtesy of My brother owning his hip hop sportswear store) Asharay asked Me.

"Why did Santa and the Birthday Fairy come early this year?!" She asked as she looked around at her new surroundings and apparel.

I laughed and explained "Because, these were just in cSanta, hey couldn't find your new home... But He will still come again, And that means Two Christmases, And another Easter!"

She grinned "He never came to our old house, Instead We would go to church parties, And get gifts from their Santa, And then We would get home and Tiecy would wrap them up, And put them under the tree, And make us tell people Our Daddy bought them!"

I shook My head, "Where were You living before, Your Mommie brought You to Me?!"

She said, "Sometimes, with our Granny but She and Tiecy could not get along, She told Tiecy, That She put HER out, But not Me, TiTi, or Lil J... But

Tiecey took us to Uncle Emilio, We stayed there a few days, Until Tiecey and Auntie Katia got into a fight....over some liquor.....liquor that caused Auntie Katia being drunk, and asleep in Our Daddy's bed.....

The child kept talking but I was zoned out, Katia and I were cool, at least I thought, But the more she talked....A lot began to make sense, Katia knew what was up all along, And pretended to be My friend, Until realized she began acting distant, around the same time Tiecey dropped off My Munchkins (As I call the kids).....Emilio not liking Me was the excuse Johnnie gave Me as a warning, As to not to call or come to His brother's house, And Nell, tried to throw subtle hints, But I was too dumb to catch on, But for now....These kids were My main focus....Then at that moment, Johnnie called! And like a fool I answered, But like the smart bitch I was raised to be.....I just wanted to see how much and how far He would go, to keep up this lie He had concocted.....It was only after hanging up the phone, My eye caught an invoice that had My new address covered by a forwarding sticker, It was an order to vacate or show cause, For an apartment, In Northgate manor.....And I have no ideathen it dawned on Me....Johnnie used My credit to play bachelor for a semester, and I Am certain this was His reason for calling ...He was no longer armed with My financial info or authorization So he wants to come back, Since by the end of next month He would be homeless, Why He thought I gave a damn is all Greek to Me, But no language can explain why I allowed Him to move into My new place, To put Me through what was to be hell I had never known?

Johnnie

Sentimental Reasons

Frankie thinks She is slick....I knew She had money someplace, Had us living in Summer Tree apartments, Big enough for the two of us, or one or two of My boys who bullshit and party until they fall asleep to drunk to drive, But since Tiecey dropped the kids off.....Frankie runs off and purchases a damn four bedroom house, From My nosy as cousin Nell at that?....., Katia did a lot of snooping only to find out, When Frankie's deceased fiancé, Had made Her his sole beneficiary, And a trust fund for the baby Frankie was carrying and would lose not much later after old boy

death, So I find out not only does Frankie's family have money, Frankie had Her own money thanks to the fiancé and kid I always find Her crying for and missing.....I hate that dead motherfuckas ghost! But now that the child support wages the IRS issued to Tiecey was little over \$4,100 dollars, Which She stupidly used and forged Frankie's signature on what was supposed to be a simple apartment, She leased a loft and that took every dime, I had to steal money from the small account Frankie never bothered to close Me out of to furnish the place with furniture, Now Rent A Center has been sending threats of taking Me to court, Yea.....I needed to go back home for a while because Tiecey is getting on My damn nerve, Katia is another reason I Am going home, Before Emilio finds her at the bottom of the staircase, After I drop kick Her stupid ass, if She keeps putting Her fucking nasty attitude on display....She is always referring to Frankie as being stupid, Because I married Her to keep My ass from having her testify against Me,,,,,,True.....But at least She ain't shacking up, Like Her and Emilio, who has a whole family her stupid ass knows nothing about, Truth be told Emilio was happy as fuck when She lost that baby, But She showed Me that She was a snake when She lied and said I shot Shane because I caught Him attacking Her, When She knew full well I sent her sailing like a fucking captured slave, Yea, Shane was cool, But fuck that, I had to cover My ass, At least He ain't dead....He is the one who came out on top, Nigga paralyzed from the neck down, But all He gotta do is roll his electronic wheelchair to the mailbox the first of the month.....Ohh.I forgot.....his mail goes straight to His folks who put money in his commissary, at McCormick Detention Center, And I had been the monthly benefactor via My brother, I mean the nigga got twenty five years for proving once again.....A Hero Ain't Nothing but a sandwich!

And since not only Frankie was My meal ticket, Now She was saddled by the kids that Tiecey dumped off where I lay My head, Whenever shit got to be too much, And since the kids have been with Frankie...I hadn't been there, But like I said, Tiecey went buckwild with the money the IRS garnished Frankie and My tax return....She was gonna be homeless in less than six weeks....And this time I was not gonna be able to get a dime out of Frankie to sneak and give Her, I had managed to avoid the real issue, And that was there are rumors,...Naw....there has been word, through the streets, that the Breaking and Entering case My brother, Emilio, And Our boy Montez, pulled off years earlier, The one Frankie was a witness to, And the one which made Me see Her as My saving grace, And as good as she treats Me, She is just an end to a means, But I had to beg Her to even have a conversation with Me, I persuaded Her that I was sincere, Now, I gotta put up with the begging to come home And these kids....At least with

them being here, No money was gonna be going out of this home, or into Tiecey for child support, Frankie was acting all nonchalant about Me, But I knew She would fall for anything, If I could keep her family out of her ear, Not to mention My cousin Nell, letting Her and these kids move into the house which once belonged to her brother Arceneaux, Who was killed for being dumb, Yet Nell blamed Me, And by letting Frankie stay in the house, Nell truly hated My ass and blames Me, She was not even that cool with Frankie, But She thought by Frankie living there, I would leave, And Frankie would divorce or testify against Me after all.. But that ain't Happening....As for My cousin's house...I Ain't 'Fraid of no ghost!"...

Nelly

Chapter 7

Good Morning Heartache

My phone was ringing so loud that it broke the beautiful threesome My mind was having with Akon, And Brian J. White....I saw the caller ID flash Katia's name and goofy ass picture. This chick was forever trying to rekindle sisterly friendship We once had, When She betrayed Me, Herself, And Her dignity When She lied on the stand, During the trial in which My Cousins Emilio was standing trial for the drug deal /robbery gone bad, My brother Arceneaux was killed or set up by someone, Arceneaux, Was dating Katia's sister, And somehow, The chick was also smashing Johnnie, Who could never be a man about His shit, So He led Emilio, And this guy Natrone to believe Arceneaux was a baller, When in fact, My brother had owned two barbershops, And whereas He was doing great and business was good, He was no baller, Emilio ,and Johnnie had both had the same opportunity as My brother, Our Granddad had in fact left one of the shops to be jointly owned by Emilio and Johnnie, Who sold their shop to My brother, So even they should have known better, But that is too heartbreaking to remember, So now with an attitude I answered. "Nelly....Girl.. Did You hear what Tiecey did?" I knew damn well she was being messy....Like the movie.....It was Friday, She had no job...And she didn't have shit to do but . .Be ratchet!

"Such as what?...You caught Her screwing Emilio?"... That put the bitch on silent mode,And I could hear the wheels of Her mind clanking...

"Hold Up?!!!! What are You trying to say?....."

"Nothing girl....But Emilio and other women are mostly the only time I hear from You....,But what has Tiecey done?....this time?"

She squealed"She dumped those rugrats on Frankie dumb ass...Johnnie was pissed...But that is just the kicker,I found a receipt where IRS took Johnnie's child support and garnished the joint income tax,Then Johnnie showed up at Our house days later complaining about being cramped up with the kids!"

"Katia,We both know Johnnie and kids do not go in the same sentence,So He is staying with You and Emilio?"

"Off and On....Mostly why I called You is to ask if You heard that When Johnnie went to get a few things from His and Frankie's place....She was gone.. Her and the kids...."

"Yea...I knew that....And that shows the trifling ass mess that We know Johnnie is and the trash Tiecey is,She has not even tried to check on Her kids,That She didn't even know the kids existed, So how did Tiecey know the type of person Francesca was ,She just up and left them there, And from what I know,For the first time in their young lives those three kids are in a stable environment! "

"But The thing is....I also found out that someone forged Frankie's name on an apartment lease,Not much later Johnnie began not coming home,So I figured He used Frankie's name to get the apartment, So I guess He is moving into it alone.....until I overheard Emilio and Johnnie discussing the fact Tiecey was living in the apartment, Under Frankie's name.....,So I hope Frankie does not try to move someplace and find out that Johnnie put His babies Moms in an apartment, Rent free.....Well ,They were,But just as soon as the month was over,they began getting dunning certified letters in regards to eviction,Seems the money for child support afforded He the apartment,And Frankie either switched Her bank account,Or they cleaned Her out....So I guess Frankie will have to move back home with Her family, Along with her stepkids!" Katia laughed.

"Why would She have to move in with Her parents when She has just moved into a new four bedroom house....At first the realtor gave her a rental agreement with later option to buy....But unbeknownst to many,Her late fiance left Her quite well off...So She had talked it over with the

owner... And bought it paid in full...The fact the owner gave Her a great deal really helped things along,So I doubt very seriously Johnnie has even heard from Her,And trust She is doing good by those kids,And Johnnie and Tiecey are both gonna reap what they sew....Johnnie will do anything that trick tells Him to do....And truth be told....Those kids are probably not even His.....!"

She laughed,"Girl.....Those kids are the spitting image of the Richards family....!"

Going in for the kill I laughed and told Her....."I never Said they weren't An offspring of the Richards....I just Am not sure which one....."

Her clueless ass said"You think Tiecey would actually screw Johnnie and Emilio's brother, Alariq?.....Ewww....!"

I was so done with this Thump Thump ass chick,So I said"Well,Johnnie if He had 99 problems,Francesca is not one of them....She and the kids are quite comfy and secure.....Arceneaux would have wanted to keep His home in the family, And As I said....Daddy or not.....Those kids are still Family,And bloodis thicker than water any day.....So Why don't You keep the home fires burning,And concentrate on Emilio,And see if you guys are on the same page,And compare marital statuses.....I know yours says single....Can't guarantee that His says the same!"

I politely said My ttyls and hung up the damn phone.....Now I'm mad....My dreams of Akon and Brian J.White had faded to black!.....I swear,That chick can dry up a wet dream!.....But I know how She is ,She is messy as fuck,And with Her big mouth,She was unknowingly helping Me to lead Johnnie right where He belonged,In Prison for Life!

Katia

Chapter 8

Sad Mood

I should have known better than to call Nell's smug and smart ass mouth bitch that She is,I know that although Emilio and Johnnie were Her first cousins,But She blamed and hated them for the death of Her brother,Arcenaux ,Who was dating My sister,Bryna,But truth be told,It was a hit gone wrong,See,Although I was with Emilio I was not only smashing his brother,Johnnie,And Arcenaux's twin brother,Arsenio,Johnnie found out, And between being mad,jealous,And dissed,He devised a plan to rob Him,instead,He had Him killed,That bullet that was meant for Arsenio,but a bullet has no eyes,And it was already hard enough telling the twins apart,Hence the hatred between the cousins,Nelly liked to take You through a lot of bullshit,However,it was Arsenio,Who vowed nothing but vengeance,Against not only Emilio and Johnnie but against Me also,He thinks I had enough time to set Him up,We were in bed,And truth be told....When My backfield is in motion ,Damn anything,And Anybody would have to wait until I hit those High pitched voice of Patti LaBelle during the orgasm,But We did hear shots fired,But Hell we were living in the Mud Lake area in Greer,random gunfire was nothing new,Until You hhead,it being followed by a blood curdling scream,And this one was!

already out the door in his robe,One of the shooters,raised the mask off to have better sight than He was running to,happened to flip over the car passing through,He managed to hold onto the car, and climb through the window, She screamed,And as soon As she skirted around the complex,I heard a loud thump,It was Johnnie,Dressed in black,I ran past His grimey ass to get to My sister,But it would be Arsenio who was wailing in pain,There lay the body of His twin brother,Arcenaux, Shot to the head killed instantly! Just then

Johnnie emerged from the building as if He had been sleeping,Eliminating Him as a suspect,And had no reason to want to kill His own cousin,But I knew,And as it turns out,The chick whose car Johnnie had been hit by and kidnapped for two seconds,Had seen the whole thing,As She had just left Her brother's apartment complex,And also could be a key eyewitness,Johnnie had made Her give Him Her Driver's License,quickly telling Her....,"I Am gonna let You go,But I got ya Addressed....one word, I Am hunting your ass down,Francesca Jacqueline Barnes....0417 Sunnyglenn Drive!

Never in My life would I have thought He would later marry Her,All for the reason She couldn't testify against Him,So I decided I should also use it to My advantage,And I did every chance I got,Just didn't know I was gonna

fall in love with Him,But I know as much as Emilio runs the street,And chase ass constantly,I have needs too,But I hate seeing Johnnie bring Frankie around,So I dropped subtle hints to Frankie that Emilio didn't like Her,Also told Her that Emilio no longer wanted Me in contact with Her,...She bought it hook ,line,And sinker,So I told Johnnie to also tell Her Emilio didn't care for Her,Assuring that She would never set foot in our home again.....At least this way it won't shock Her as much when She realizes,Tiecey wasn't gonna take Her man.....I was!,Just had to devise My plan!

Frankie
Chapter 9

Baby,Baby,Baby

I knew taking in My husband's love children,And trying to give them a new life,And stability... But what really gets Me,Is My family doing and going out of their way to help,Nell was a Godsend when it came the having the house ,Sold to Me instead of just renting it....She also is not slick....It was like a big "Kiss My Ass" message to Johnnie....knowing He was not about the life He pretends,She knew He would not Bring his ass within feet of the house,Which belonged to Her brother,.....So Why Am I standing here ,Listening to Him snore his ass off,In My bed,in that very house?.....After weeks of running out on Me,Because I took in his children,With his side chick ,Which were conceived during his marriage to Me?.

But last night He called asking where had I taken His children? To Me that was some funny shit,Because last behind heard ,He was living back at His brother's place,And Tiecey had run off with some MC BROKER THAN A MF RAPPER...But ,I had to hear his explanation, So I told Him to meet Me somewhere, And We would talk....Trust and talk was all I had in store for Him,.....So I felt some kind of way when ten minutes later,The doorbell rang,

"Tay,could You get the door?It could be the pizza I ordered,!"

She grinned,grabbed Trinity and J.J ,as she always does,I noticed that early on,That She never left the two younger ones behind whenever She left the room,I just thought it was her "Mama Hen" ways,After a minute, The three off them slunk back into the room,Followed by Johnnie's ass.....,Before I could say anything the doorbell rang again,This time,It

was the pizza,I opened the door,As the delivery guy handed Me the two pizzas,Johnnie tried acting all Macho.....He opened his wallet and fumbled through a few dollars,"This should cover it !"
But when He realized I had paid via credit card....I saw two things in his eyes,....."WTF...AND CHA CHING!"

"Johnnie,How did You know where I live?,I said I would meet You someplace,Not once did I invite You to My house!"

"Katia told Me....And You are still My wife, Those. Are My kids!"

"Johnnie....You do not give a rats ass about those three kids in there!.. Neither does their video ho of a mother!".....It is obvious that before She left them here,that She was neglectful as can be!.....Yes,it hurt Me to My soul,To know that You had kids behind My back....during our marriage.....But those three kids in there are innocent....And You are more to blame than Tiecey.....You cheated on Me,She didn't, The only good thing She ever did was not even meant to be good intention worthy....
..She did the best act of selfishness, by bringing these kids to You,When She realized She was not mommy material.....But truth be told,Your ass is the one who should be in there, talking to your babies.....Be a damn father for once in Your life!"

"How can I be a good Dad Frankie?....,You moved and took the kids.....How can I be a good Dad if You and I are not together?!!"

"Johnnie.....there are three kids,Here,that You never took interest in or actually know,And We have only been here a few weeks....Where did you run off to until now?!"
He just put his hands

inside his jacket pocket and pulled out what was a half full a bottle of blue top vodka bottle,And took a long swig"I was at My brother's house,And for most part trying to find Tiecey's trifling ass!.....That's What! ,I needed space,And that little ass apartment was too cramped,So I left to find Her,And to make I one less mouth for You to feed....I left,To save You alot of hassle.....I see it Makes no difference.....I even volunteered to take the kids to DSS and tell that their mom left them....!"

"Are You even hearing Yourself?....I mean I know You married Me with the sole purpose of not testifying against,You,I maybe married Her You for the wrong reasons too...But those three kids in there....did not ask to be born,But since they were, And you and their mom ain't shit.....I guarantee You This.....Those kids are gonna get the best life,I can afford to give them,And for That..... I don't need You.....Because You know nothing about real love,And I can deal with You being a no good man to Me,But these children will want for nothing!"

He just sat there leaning to the side of the sofa,....He had fallen into a drunken sleep.....And that is where I left his asson the sofa.....I joined the kids as We ate our pizza and watched MTV's Catfish.....Yes.....I know its not appropriate for kids their ages,But maybe the kids could learn early.....I wish I had smut TV growing up as a kid.....Because I married the biggest catfish of all.....Which is how he looked drunk and asleep,mouth gaping open like a catfish!

Johnnie
Chapter 10

Lost and Lookin!

I fell asleep on Frankie's couch,and She left Me there, But I got up at around 3:30 a.m....the house was quiet,Of Course I had this heavy ass horseshoe in My coat pocket.....Yea....in the south they are used to keep ghost away.....Truth be told,I put nothing past My cousin Arcenaux when He was alive,So not saying I'm scared,But now that He is dead, Because of some misunderstanding, He might try to Casper his way up in here and not be the friendly ghost Casper was.....I didn't want to turn on the tv or anything to wake Frankie or those three hellions, Not until I got a chance to snoop around a bit,Because according to Katia,Frankie had paid in full for this house, And it wasn't a cheap paid in full either...See I knew Frankie came from a family with a little bit of money,But according to Katia,Frankie's first fiancé had left her a good chunk of change.....And Frankie didn't see fit to share,At least with Me.....She kept a lot of bullshit from Me,Enough to know I had to get back into My marriage,Even if I had

to play Dad to My three kids that My baby mama couldn't keep to herself! Tiecey is Messy as hell ,Which is Why My brother,Emilio slid her over to Me after He was done with Her, I don't see how She never got pregnant from him,Shit He and his real wife,Bryna have six kids,And Yes,Wifey,Katia is in the dark on that one especially since He drives 16 wheelers,When Katia thinks Emilio is on the road,He is really in Columbia with his family,And Bryna thinks the same way,But Bryna is like Frankie,Not street smart at all,But unlike Frankie,Emilio married Bryna because He loves Her,So unless She kicks him to the curb.....He is never gonna leave,And I thought I felt sorry for Katia for a minute,But in reality.....She is far more toxic than Tiecey.....I just knew one thing.....I gotta let Tiecey know that She may not be getting evicted after all.....Seems Frankie still has the open account She and I shared.....one entry of the four digit pin.....And I got My Answer!.....

Tiecey

Chapter 11

Laughin' and Clowning

I know I Am ratchet for leaving the kids behind with Francesca, But I was simply sending a message to Johnnie's ass.....And that was that if He didn't move Me and His secret seed out of Drummond Village Apartments,playing Me to the side.....While They lived in a spacious two bedroom apartment with a fucking view....A good view at that,While I sit hidden away,Like I Am the side chick,But in reality,I was the main chick,Until Johnnie and two of his boys,Kenny and Raj tried to rob the Apartment office where She worked was entwined with Greer Federal Credit Union,Stupid ass Johnnie led the crime,He also happened to demand cash from each drawer,And Being the flirty dirty pie dog that He was/is as He was following behind Frankie to the vault,He was watching the swing in Her ass that He paid no attention to the fact His back pocket had a tearing in the lining and As He was making eye to ass contact,Never felt His thin,empty,Except for his ID ,Frankie had spotted it as they were heading back to front of the lobby,and with his eyes on her ass ,And Ass on his eyes,misssed the swift kick as Frankie flung the wallet beneath a desk,After they had gotten a measly

\$2000 they leftOnly later that night As Johnnie was taking Me out to an elegant sonic restaurant, There was a road block,But We weren't riding dirty,But the cop walked up all friendly and asked"How Y'all tonight...License and Registration please?"

Johnnie then realized He didn't have them on Him,And when He gave the officer his full name,The cop ran his info,I began to suspect something was wrong....

I be damned,We sat in the car a good twenty minutes as He sat behind us reading off the info in his car dispatcher,.....This is when I came up with the idea,Officer Friendly had not asked for My ID and had no reason to,And if Johnnie had done something, I wasn't gonna let what He did or didn't do cause the cop to wanna run My ID,And I had a few fights that I got locked up for,....Just didn't go to court.....So I slowly and then heavily and swift I put car n gear and yanked the wheel to my passenger side ,,,foot on the gas and away We go....Except suddenly the car sputtered and stopped right in front of two squad cars,They Got Johnnie's ass out of the car,And luckily they let My ass go.....But Johnnie would not be so lucky His wallet was the turned over to police linking Him to the robbery earlier that day,And since it was Frankie who could testify if It was in fact Johnnie who led the robbery,And for some dumb ass reason,She said She was not sure,But Kenny and Raj insisted that it was Johnnie, They didn't get away with their money since Johnnie was the leader He handed his bag to Kenny as He kept His gun trained, Backing out of the office ,There was an explosion,Not fire....a dye pack.....They were red from toe to toe,They got caught up,And Johnnie left them.....Therefore they snitched,And A trial was being arranged, Johnnie cried and sweet talked Frankie into marrying Him,He played on Her losses,And She fell for it,Marrying him made Her the only valid eyewitness ,Marriage would keep her from being able to testify in this such case,I was pissed until I realized She had some money.....And Then WE plotted.....But I was gonna hit his ass in her purse every time, Suddenly I heard the phone buzz but it wasn't mine,It was the phone of My sleepover buddy....I shook Him awake after seeing who was calling him,I told Him,"Yo,Wake up and get the phone!"....Katia....Whew She was blowing Emilio up all damn night!!!!!! He ignored the call and yanked Me back into the.bed!

I began to close My eyes,but then My phone began blowing up....And I recognized the number as belonging to My Landlord,I knew I was living in and on borrowed time ,But to My surprise He left a voice message,stating that My rent had been paid up for two months,Now you all can believe in miracles if You want to,But.....I knew who had paid it....Although He initially said No,I shook Emilio's shoulder...He woke up and said ,"See...this is Why

I try to stay away from home ,I can't get any fucking rest around Ya'll nagging ass women....I'm about to be out.....!

Here and now,I just shrugged and said with a stupid grin on My face,guess He didn't want to seem soft by acknowledging that He had paid My rent for Me,His broke ass brother ,Johnnie only seemed to have money,three times a year,His wife's income tax returns,Her summer bonus,Her Christmas bonus,And even though I left the kids with her, I would still be getting the garnishing taxes,As long as they stayed married,But now that the kids are with Frankie,Johnnie moved back in with Emilio and Katia,Who was quick to let Me know Johnnie was not bent....He was straight up broke!,And that is against My religion,Why do I need a man who can't keep a roof I've My head,Hell....He is lucky,That I don't give info that I have,Such as his marriage to Frankie was not only opportunistic, But it was not known by his cousin Nelly,And truth be told,When it all falls down,Johnnie would be on the bottom of the heap.....You know what.....Let Me Thank Emilio right quick...

"Thanks for paying My rent....After You said No....I was feeling kind of pissed,But I know You not bummy like Ya brother!"

He looked at Me quizzically....But smiled....."Was He bummy when you were sleeping with Him?"

I was not expecting that....."You know that was more deep that Me,You told Me to get at Him,Just so We could creep without Katia finding out! "

He got up and went into the restroom....I took the liberty of looking at the screen of his phone,which was ringing,He couldn't hear it due to the shower running,And I didn't want to get caught looking at his messages,But I have a guy who taught Me how to pair a phone and get the messages ,I guess You are wondering why I didn't do this with Johnnie's phone,two reasons, First of all His ass only had pre pay and hardly kept it paid,The Second and most important,I didn't give enough of a damn,But What I Am seeing flash on this screen,is a name I knew ,Richards.....But the first name threw Me for a loop,To My knowledge, Johnnie,Emilio,And Alariq had only two sisters,Who were married ,Their names Were Chrissie Staggs,And Monica Robinson, So who in the hell is,Bryna?.....No idea,But was gonna find out,It had an area code of 843,I can't wait until He leaves because I was on My ratchet shit.....

Johnnie

Chapter 12

Another Saturday Night

I hadn't been home in two days, And from the way Katia was throwing pots and pans in the kitchen, Emilio must have been a two or three day run, But I tried to go to My room, Before She started asking for questions ,I knew her pattern, Whenever bruh was away for days, She wouldn't bother Me for sex, Because She was afraid, He would be gone for good, So she gets on her faithful woman shit. Until She knew she was still wifey... Truth be told She had reached the top of that as far as She could climb, Because whereas She is wifey, Unbeknownst to Her, Bryna Michelle Richards has been his wife for eighteen years, and have four of his children, And when He is away, He is in Charleston, with His wife and kids, But Katia is a silly ho.... Never once had Anyone in our family, except Nelly and Her brothers, had ever met Her, She just took for Granted that she was the one.... And she is right ... She is the one... the one who let's Him run drugs from Her House, The one who was vain enough to sit up and talk shit about everyone else, Behind a man who does not claim Her, Years ago that is the same reason He put Me on Tiecey, She was his semi main chick, Until He began to realize, She was nothing more than a money hungry hoodrat.... She was reluctant to even look My way, Until she saw a duffle bag filled with money, But it was a prop, it was My brothers money, But He knew she would go for it.... And She did, Problem was I was only allowed to keep five grand, And she ran through it, But by that time, I was in love with Her trifling ass... And still Am, But now She knows My pockets are not what She is looking for... Truth be told the fact She left the Kids with Frankie, And in doing so it outed Me.... meaning, She was done with Me, And no longer cared if She ruined My marriage, She knew that was a complicated subject, If Frankie flips and divorces Me, And My case reopened, Frankie could testify and put Me away until I am too old to do shit but die! So when I found out through Katia that not only had Frankie not called CPS , But had come into a windfall of cash that allowed Her to relocate and take the kids with Her, So being Me, I went to check it out, And Katia didn't lie, I was able to find out that Frankie is more well off than She ever let in during the years of our marriage, Thanks to that dead fiance of her, And at the time of his death, Frankie was pregnant, But lost the baby a bit later, Making Her his sole heir, Guess She didn't see fit to share with Me, That was not very generous of Her, So I just put one foot in front of the other,, Got into My car and went to visit, Needless to say , Neither She or the kids were exactly happy to see Me.... But I could have cared less, I just wanted info, And I knew the only way to get it was to drink until Frankie

knew it would be dangerous for Me to drive ,So I knew if I fell into a semi drunken sleep,She would just leave Me to sleep it off,And that is exactly what happened, I woke up,this damn heavy ass horse shoe in my Jacket, I waited until the house was quiet with sleep,Logged into the accounts that Frankie was too trusting not to change....And there it was....Jackpot! I wasted no time sending money to the top up debit card that Tiecey had,And also sent in two months payment on her condo,At least She would see that I Am trying...But as yet Tiecey has yet to call Me and let Me know that She got the money and to let Me know that the landlord received payment,Frankie would not miss the money anytime soon,And when she did....I would act clueless,But just to be safe,I Am gonna keep tabs on Frankie's mailbox ,She hardly opened her bank statements ,As if she never really worried about money,Now I knew why,She was not hurting for any funds, But just to be on the safe side,I did something Frankie would never do,I managed to set up a system where My phone would get a text from Her account, So it came thru to my phone whenever there was a deposit or withdrawal,And the withdrawals I made were sent to My phone, Which I will be able to keep on thanks to My unsuspecting, And on the quiet tip wife,Who has stacks on deck,It also gave Me hope,Hope that Tiecy would stop her bullshit and chasing ballers, Who evidently are not balling enough to keep a roof over her head,But I Am just gonna play it by ear,Get my nap on.....And pop up at her place later tonight! But as I was beginning to drift off,I heard My brother walk into the door,And soon after,I heard Katia running Her mouth ,I was gonna just get My ass up and outta here,Until I heard Katia ask "Really,Emilio,Ya brother is staying here rent free,My ass is not Ya maid,Cleaning up after You,is one thing when ya ass remember where ya live!"

"Katia!,I swearI will turn around and leave just as quick as I came...You better shut up,And Don't worry about My brother,Be grateful Your dumb ass has a roof over your head!"

She obviously had been drinking,Because other than shut up like She usually would,"She asked."Where were You Emilio?.....I Ain't ya brother's keeper,Let him go back to FrankieShe can afford to add to the household....since She has bought Arcenau's house from Nelly!,One thing is fo'damn sho'..Tiecey don't need His ass.....She called Me today bragging about this guy she been tricking with paid Her rent up for two months, And put money into her account!"

Emilio didn't answer right away,Because I knew He was shocked to hear that Nelly would sell her brother's house,Especially to My wife,Knowing how Nelly felt about My brother and I,Even if We are Her first cousins.He

finally asked "Who told you that lie?"

Katia told Him that Nelly Herself had told Her, But I was listening to hear more about Tiecey, And why had She not reached out to Me, To at least let Me know She got the money, And to let Me know what was up.

Katia told My brother, "I asked Tiecey if She wanted to talk to with Johnnie, And she said Fuck Naw, Broke ass had Me damn near homeless!"

Both She and My brother laughed like they were watching an episode of Sanford Son!

I was pissed, But I decided then and there..... Since Tiecey had a baller to pay Her rent and give Her money, At least that was what She had told Katia, And since I knew, I was said baller, But She wanted to front.... I was gonna give Her something to make Her wish She did have a baller, I was gonna move back home with Frankie, And put on the Sorry, Doting Dad, Supportive husband, At least until I can get back with Tiecey, I knew Frankie would take Me back into the home, Even if She banished Me to the spare room, I was gonna get back into Her home, Good Graces, And bank account, Just enough to get Tiecey to see, I wasn't a ne'er do well type..... Shit... I married into money! I knew that already, But now I know the truth, And that is..... Frankie was set for life, But I knew that although She is gorgeous, She is pampered and spoiled by Her parents, She has never really had a man in Her life except her dead fiancé, And most of all She had low self esteem, And that I didn't understand, But damn trying, I knew two things, She had grown to love My kids, Even if they were constant reminders of My infidelity, But when Tiecey dropped the news and kids off on Her.... Although it hurt, Frankie, was not in any hurry for those kids to be cared for by anyone but Her, I know One more thing..... She would want a man in Her house to help, And I Am gonna volunteer... No insist.... I Am going home.... If only until I can stack up a bit of cash.... Hell... I gotta do what I gotta do.... I gotta get Tiecey back!

Nelly

Chapter 13

Nothing Can Change This Love

I woke up to the blare of the alarm clock, And the sound of the shower running, I began to feel that vertigo, You know, That falling feeling, But it was a feeling I was accustomed to for the past twenty one years, My

Children's Dad ,Terry was showering,And ready to report back to His Army Post,.....And His wife,Yea,I know I talk about Frankie being stupid,Katia being used,And Tiecey being ratchet,But the difference was I met Terry Gist while I was in My senior year in high school,When He came into our school to speak of the opportunities the Armed Forces had to offer,But I had long ago decided to become a Probation Officer,And stuck to it,However I fell for Terry because He looked so very suave in his uniform,But too soon did I realize Everything that looks good to you,Is not always good for You,Which is why Terry and I are not married,.....He was already married when We met,And has been divorced ,remarried,divorced, Remarried....Yep Married three times,However,He has NEVER even asked Me to move in with Let alone marry Him,And Although, I Am quick to say I have no time for marriage,I told this lie so much that everyone believed it....However,I couldn't convince Myself as much,I don't know what it was about Me that made Him not want a life with Me,But then again,I should be grateful that I Am not the wife ,sitting Home while He is out of town three to six days a month,Playing in another woman's ass.....Most of the time,Ass being played in would be mine....But whose else ass is what I Am always plagued with,I mean He takes care of Our kids financially, But at ages 19 and 17 they need more than money from Him,They needed their father,Of course they had My dad and My brothers, But every child wants to have their father in their lives,Terry has a total of six children, And Blessing it is ...They are all very close,My kids,Timmia,My oldest daughter is 19,And Joachima is 17,So it is a great joy knowing they are very close with their dad's other children, Shanna,Tremetria,Regina,And Terry Jr.,Truth be told I got along with all their mothers', Terry it seemed had no paternal interest in either of His children, Sure never had any of them wanted for anything,...Except His love,But being the Macho Officer that He was,He made it clear,His career was first and foremost,As far as He was concerned as long as His kids were not hungry or raggedy His commitment was done.

He came out of the shower,As always,He emerged, fully dressed,Which was a good thing,It meant He was gonna leave before the kids,Were up,Timmia had to be at Greenville Tech by 8:45 and Joachima who was a senior at Greer High, would be up and pilfering around in less than an hour,However,I wished, He would have stayed long enough to spend breakfast time with the girls,But wishful thinking.

"Terry,You could at least spend a few moments with Our daughters,..!" He sarcastically spoke"You Spending time with them is good enough,I spend money on them, So I have to bust My ass to put them through school, No time for buddy like activities! " He chuckled as if Redd Foxx and

Richard Pryor were live and in living color!

I said nothing more,Because it would have ended up with My ass not seeing Him for months, And that would not suffice,I love Terry,And if He would settle down,And see the mistake He made by not marrying Me,I would move every mountain to make Him happy.

He continued to gather his things,As He did ,A sheet of paper slipped from His briefcase,I could See the Emblem on the letterhead,Although I acted as if I didn't see it,However,I saw it....His current wife,Rhonda was suing Him for divorce,I just blankly handed Him the paper,He was not even aware that I skimmed the content of the letter, He just put it back in His briefcase,Handed Me a check for \$2,400 to divide among the girls and Myself,"See Y'all next time I Am in town!" He kissed Me on My forehead as He opened the door,He ran right into "Chima" as Our youngest daughter together is known as.

" Hey,I was just stopping by to drop off some money with Your Mom....How is school ?"

She looked at him blankly, But answered"I Am a senior so as the months wind down,School will soon be over,But I Am fine...!"

He looked as if He wanted to say something slick from His mouth but He just smiled at Her,And told Her,"So is this how You speak to Your Superiors?! "

"Superior?...You really are an Army man huh?.....,You are My Daddy!"

He cleared His throat "Father!.....!"

Being Chima she tried to bite Her tongue ...Damn. ..didn't work...."DADDY.....You made Us.....but FATHER... NO!....Father's care for every aspect their child has and chooses to be there for them.....Not just when He makes monthly rest stops to sleep with his baby mamaor should I say the only baby mama who is willing !"

He yelled"Respect Me!....No matter what You think of Me... You will Respect Me!"

China,Yelled back" Respect My Mother!....." Then She turned to look at Me ,As I stood wearing nothing but My Robe....and tearfully said"RESPECT YOURSELF!"

She then slammed the door to Her bedroom,Terry was pissed,He looked at Me,And said"AND YOU WONDER WHY I STAY AWAY FROM YOU!"

He then wrote another check,for the same amount,And left it on the end table,Before storming out!

This meant,It would be months before He would be back....And I wanted not to care....But Dammit....I cared. ,...

Katia
Chapter 13

It's Alright

As Johnnie was moving his belongings back to his stupid ass wife's house, Emilio sat on the sofa watching Judge Mathis, Probably taking notes on how to get away with some petty shit,I got a text message from an 843 number,

843: Who is this?

Me:You text Me ...I should be asking You?

843:Ask My man who I Am.....Ask him Who Bryna is.....

Before I could say anything,Emilio got a text message,That sent him into the other room,All I could hear was "What the fuck is you talking about? What Bitch text You?!...Gone wit that bullshit B!" He slammed His phone shut,And stormed back into the room,Suddenly He began to realize why I was being a Bitch,Or so He thought,But He went back to the TV. I waited until Johnnie came into the kitchen looking smug as hell just because He had a new come up,Looking sexy as hell...still scrub ,But sexyI was mad I didn't get My swerve on with Him during Emilio's absence, But at that time I was just hoping and worried,Each time Emilio left,I was never sure if He was gonna go ghost on My ass,Leaving Me....broke and possibly homeless, Since He paid the notes on mortgage,And I never knew the status.But what I really wanted to know the identity of this chick,Bryna,But I knew Johnnie wouldn't tell Me..So I just decided to put it out there, I marched into the kitchen and asked"Emilio....Who the fuck is Bryna?!" You could have heard a rat pissing on cotton,But Johnnie could be heard beneath his breath saying"aww shit!" Enough said. Had to be,Because at that time,Tiecey called Me,Also ,Emilio just looked at Me with that "Don't be asking Me about no other bitch look!" Tiecey was talking a mile a minute,So I said hold on .. Then I handed the

phone to Johnnie. .As if Tiecey had called for Him,But couldn't reach Him since He hardly kept his phone on,And to My amazement, When He heard Her voice,He closed the phone,And both He and Emilio laughed,As if they had some sort of inside joke,That really pissed Me off so bad when they did shit like that,Acting like frat brothers who shared a secret,That was directed at Me and that I did not appreciate! So I asked the question again..." Who is Bryna?!.....And Why are You acting stupid?"...Ya new jump off?!"

Emilio chuckled"Katia....Go on with that bullshit...You My only jump off!" Yeah,He was a bit drunk,But a drunken mouth speaks a sober mind,And He just kept laughing,As did Johnnie....But let them keep laughing....I was getting dressed and gonna go recruit a nosy bitch to help get the answers I needed!...I called Tiecey back,And once she heard the commotion...I swear that bitch seemed to perk up!..."Come on over Trick,See You in a bit!"

Emilio
Chapter 14

Love You Most Of All!

I was happy as hell when Katia let to run errands,And now that Johnnie had left to move a few items to Frankie's,I decided to pack My shit for a four day trip,I had to go straighten out a few things....I needed to get to My wife,Bryna,She had called Me claiming that She had been getting text messages from a random Hoe,Who told Her about Katia and I living together in Greer! I told Her ass somebody was trolling Her and fucking with Her mind...She was raising \$100 worth of Hell,Bryna was always bitching about something,But I guarantee one thing She does NOT bitch about is money,Because although,I have stacks on deck,She,like Frankie,Bryna came from decent money..As her parents Tim and Barbara Styles ,My bitch in law's often threw that in My face often,But Barbara was also quick to remind Me that I was one in ten thousand,Because for a High School dropout I was not hopelessly ignorant,Then there is Tim,Who always dropped hints about How He and Bryan's brothers,Orlando and Vegas (Don't even ask!.)are ready for Me to trip so they can Contribute to the trip! I laughed because for one thing,Tim , Unbeknownst to Barbara,Or Bryna,That Bryna and I wound up together,Was Tim's fault...Bryna is not very attractive,In fact,To quote Tim, "To know Her is to love Her!" But in this case,To Know Her,Is to not even want to look at Her!"

But He promised Me that if I put the drug game behind Me,He would pay Me \$400 a week,Through His Bar ,which He owned three of,And gave Me a fake position at the Greer location,Gentz! A very high end upscale sports bar,Of Course I was only a manager on paper,So I began dating Bryna on My part of the deal,But I made it clear that I was still gonna do Me! And I did,And as soon as He and Barbara moved to Charleston with Bryna's brothers in tow,Meaning they would be close in case sometimes went down,While I began making the commute back & forth to manage the bar,And as I said...Do Me! While lost in My thoughts,I had exceeded the speed limit,I saw the swirling blue lights,I knew the drill,I placed both hands on the wheel,And waited for Him to approach Me,As He got close I realized,He was actually a She....She began to ask for My license and registration,Then burst out laughing,I looked at Her and grinned from ear to ear when I recognized Her,....My pocket Aunt,As we call change of life babies,She is My Mom's baby sister,But She was a year younger than I Am!

"Damn Emilio...I wish You could have seen the look on your face!" She laughed gasping for air

I burst out right along with Her,"Damn...Shay!"

She said,"Glad to see you ...Grapevine inmate Tea Johnnie's case Has just been reopened,Things not looking good...!

"Thanks Shay,Don't mention this to Him....already suicidal So let Me tell Him!"

She agreed,We hugged...But I ain't telling Johnnie shit!...I looked into the mirror And said to My own reflection,'I love You most of all... Don't get it twisted,I Am a good man,But I do put Myself first over all else,Katia asking about Bryna really caught Me off guard,Then My father in law called to say that My jump off had been harassing Bryna,I got pissed,Katia,is easy to keep in line,But Bryna was My wife,,And Katia never will be,But sometimes I just wanna say to Hell with everybody ,But right now,Although it was fortunate that My Aunt Shay was the one to pull Me over,Because at this moment,I Am wrecking My brain.....Where in the hell was My wallet,Of Course nothing about this car was suspect or dirty,But still Any other cop would have found the fact the registration info was in My glove compartment, But would have held Me until they ran a

Driver's License check, So I knew I had to have left it in one of two places, And I was doing an illegal U-turn, To find out which location. And once I found what I was looking for, I was taking Myself home to Bryna, And Our kids, That is one thing, Bryna was in some ways the perfect wife in Mother, She was just not the image I wanted to be deemed as My spouse, But I was gonna go home, stay at least a week, Just to appease the situation, And all will be well, Bryna and the kids would be happy to have Me make the commute home, For no reason other than missing them, And all will be copacetic within The Emilio and Bryna Richards household As the song says, If You wanna be happy for the rest of Your life, Never make a pretty woman Your wife! Words to live by! Johnnie had a fine lil wife, And A ratchet but fine baby mama, And where has that beauty gotten Him.... A marriage of inconvenience to keep from being testified against in relation to a robbery He could catch 45 years for, I told Him to marry Francesca, To keep her Eyewitness ass in check, All I wanted was for Johnnie to take better attention to shit He does, Tiecey would have a foot to Her ass if She had she exposed another type of dude as She did when She left those kids with a wife who until then had no knowledge of them, Especially being conceived during the marriage. See I never deal with stuff like that, For one Katia does not know I have a wife of 21 years, And three children with Her, I never told Her, Or anyone else about Bryna, Why should I? What true man is gonna want his side chick, in their business? Katia is My side chick, But She is the one who is committed to this relationship, I only commit to whatever is in the moment, And Katia filled that purpose to Me, But that was all this arrangement is to Me, A place to do My real job, And She came along at the perfect time, But then there is Tiecey, My brother's true love, Who could always break him into a worthless nothing, So I also added Her to My roster, But She was too damn money hungry.... Always has been, And funny thing is.... She was behind on her mortgage, Asked Me for the money ... Funny thing is I had an excuse all ready to tell Her no, But We got between the sheets, I must have dozed off, Because She was happy as hell, when I woke up Thanking Me.... I know the chick is silly but this proved My point ... I Don't pay bills where I lay My head, So why would she even bother, To ask Me.... But I went along with it, But, I got a peripheral look at the receipt, My eyes locked on the fact, Franchesca Richards is the name I saw on the receipt.... And now Johnnie was moving back with Her, And with Frankie purchasing My cousin Arcenau's house, Something was up.... Johnnie was always an opportunist, And for Him to even consider going back to Frankie, Especially after Frankie decided not to place His out of wedlock children with CPS... She wanted the kids to have a stable home, And by doing so, She was

only making things easier for Johnnie, And in a way easier for Me.... And Tieceybecause once Johnnie got back into Frankie's home, He would be once again sneaking into the bank account, Siphoning money, To keep Tiecey Happy.... And Tiecey had no idea that I was gonna be there in the shadows, Because from this day forward, Each and Every dime She would be getting.... I would be getting... See Frankie knew incriminating shit that could get Johnnie locked away for a long time.... But ,I had something on Tiecey, That she would pay anything to keep hidden!

Frankie
Chapter 15

Willow Weep For Me.

Yes, Johnnie is back in life ... But no way in the hell is He in My bed!, I mean come on, I have three sobering reminders that He is not even a safe sex type of guy . . Damn that, I Am strong enough to love his children through the rest of My life, But damn if He is gonna give Me a big disease with a little name..... Pass!

I have yet to tell Nelly or My parents but truth be told, This is My decision, He owed those kids, He owes Me.... He even owes Tiecey's child neglecting ass..... He needed to be in his kids lives, I can handle the maternal part, Far better than Tiecey could or ever attempt to be, Of Course the kids were weary of the living arrangement, But it did have at least what I thought would be a positive side, While I was managing Paralee's , His unemployed ass would save Me from waking the kids and taking them to My Sister in law, Nora's daycare center, She was shocked that Johnnie had finagled his way back to Me,

"Frankie?!... Did You travel by way of banana boat on a sea of whipped cream ?..... What the hell?...."

"Nora Lee!" Which is how I address My sister in law, Who is more like sister

to Me than an however in law "If I Am gonna raise these kids, Johnnie is the biological Father, And I plan to petition the court for legal guardianship ,So I feel I can give them a better life, In a two parent homelike We were.....!"

Nora understood exactly what I meant, Her parents, Like mine have been married over 45 years, And are very supportive, And share a close bond with family.

She just shook Her head, I told Her, "I want them raised with two parents, I need a man in the home So they know a sense of a two parent home!" I knew She was upset, But this is what I wanted.

"I want a man in the house!"

She shook Her head, And said "So until You find one.... Johnnie is the substitute?" " laughing as if it was funny!

I just looked at Her, As silly as she could be but that is Why She and My brother DayDay make such a good couple, He was equally silly..... But My mind was set, And I told Her just that!

"Well, Did you bring their clothes so they can stay for the weekend?, Shasta, Fanta, And Fresca are already down in the basement, And You need to talk this over with Johnnie, So let the kids enjoy a weekend of fun before You let Johnnie pop up on them!.... Frankie.... How can You be so smart, Yet dumb at the same time?....."

"Says the grown ass woman who named Her kids after soft Drinks?... Lol... Talk about a Thirsty Trick!" I laughed.... And she yelled to Her daughters,

"Oooh Auntie Frankie is making fun of ya'll names again!"

I called to My three brats, to come give Me a bye bye kiss, They came running to Me, with hugs and kisses and saying I love you's... That were a cover for "Bye..... We are having fun.... Muah! "

I looked at My Sister in law, And hugged Her both of us laughing at how expendable parents are when it comes to new cousins...

After I got outside,My silly ass sister in law said" And I'm telling DayDay!" She laughed at Me,As she shut the door,locked it,And was holding,J. J. In her arms,Looking out the window....Silly as She is....Nora Lee is My Girl!

Katia

Chapter 16

Good Times

I stopped by the store to get the beer and wine coolers that I told Tiecy I would bring for our Netflix and chill time ,We were gonna catch up on our gossip! And just because I was still pissed at Emilio,I needed to be petty and I hate to leave any stone unturned,As far as I was concerned,Johnnie knew more than He let on about who Bryna was and that made Him the runner up on My get back meter!,Vicariously through Tiecey!

She was cool but She always seemed to rise like a damn Phoenix from whatever gutter of ash she falls into,This morning She called Me bragging about some entrepo baller she had snagged,Funny just a week ago She was crying broke!,Now She has the nerve to sit up and act as if She was better than I Am,But where ya kids?...

"Katia,Why you put Johnnie on that damn phone? You know I can't be bothered with his dietary pockets,He finds out His My new man has Me living ,He would try to beg his way back to Me?" She cackled like the chicken head that She is!

"Girl puhlezz....Johnnie is not gonna come begging anytime soon!,I Am just glad to have him outta Emilio's and My house!"....I purposely looked blank,Knowing She was having a "WTF" moment....And I let Her!,After all it was Her house.

"See...I knew He was gonna go back to Mama house,Like the little boy his

ass has always been!,And We both know He is allergic to Employment...Legit Employment that is!" She laughed.

"You know Mama Richards is not letting Him back in Her house,After the police kicked in Her door looking for Him the last time....or should I say one of the times Frankie has put his ass out!"

She sucked those teeth overbite and all..."I knew the kids being there would deter Him from going back to "Eyewitness Bitchery"

I laughed, Hell I didn't care for Frankie much either,But I knew it would rub Tiecey the wrong way,So I acted like that bitch's cheerleader!!!...GIMME AN "F" GIMME AN "A".. ...You get My meaning.

" Tiecey ,Do You think putting those kids off on Frankie was a smart move? You don't know Her like that ,Plus they were conceived by Her husband,during Their marriage,You are lucky that Frankie is a different type of Mother....I would had three damn storks pick their asses up and dropped them off facilities for children with ignorant moms!"

She looked at Me and asked"How many days has it been since Emilio has been home? 'Cause ya sound mad?!"

Just then My phone beeped,It was Emilio.

"Katia,Stop playing Yo,I can't find My wallet? What You do with it?!"

"Emilio,I never had it,Hell I was in the kitchen the whole time,And I never got face to face no more than a few minutes before I left,Ask Johnnie....His ass may have it!,Trying to pass for you during a robbery!"

He slammed the phone down,I heard him mumble in the background,
"Imma beat Her Ass!"

Getting back to the subject at hand,I noticed Tiecey all in My conversation, I gave no details,But did know how to know Her ass to a brief reality.

"Frankie came into a windfall of cash, And bought Arecenaux's house
!!!....Johnnie begged to be with Her and the kids, Money talks, And bullshit
runs a marathon... and his ass was out of bullshit, So I Am sure You don't
need to worry about Johnnie or the kids...Enjoy Your baller boo!"

"Girl....You know I Am always gonna do that....But gotta ask You a
question....Do You know some slide named Bryna?" Tiecey asked.

I don't know how She knew of this Bryna, But I felt a rush of relief, Bryna
must be one of Johnnie's chicks, And Emilio stupid ass was covering for
Him again, Well this chick had another thing coming if She is trying to put
Emilio in Her and Johnnie shit!

"Whomever Bryna is You tell Her, To keep that shit between You, Her
, Johnnie, Oh and Frankie too....!"

She was all swollen up in the chest as if She wanted to Play Rocky
vs. Apollo Creed!...But As for MeI would be the Russian dude... Rushing
the ass to the damn floor!!!!

"Why would She need to text Emilio, If She were seeing Johnnie?...Girl
bye!...You always believe Emilio is covering for Johnnie like a caring
brother, When We both know Emilio could care less about Johnnie. ..Or You
either....For that matter?!"

"Girl....Emilio rest his head with Me, Whenever He is not on the road
handling his business, Johnnie On the other hand, The lazy , feeble bum He
is, Gets in wherever He fits in, Then after the random slide kicks
his ass out, He runs back to Frankie, He did that shit, Lots of times, So truth
is You the fool....You think He just married Her to keep Her from
testifying.....Bullshit, Truth Baby Girl.....He Always goes back, And it seems
the case could get thrown out, So He has nothing to really keep up the play
play, If He didn't love Her....Plus....You dumped Your kids on Frankie...
Yet Johnnie still went back!"

"Whatever Katia... Johnnie can do Him and/or Frankie, I got a man, And his
pockets are very manly as well, I could give not two shits about about
either one of them, But trust, I can hit a bitch in the pockets too!"

"Yea,I know ,Problem is that is forgery My Dearest Bitch!,You and Johnnie had all type of shit,In Frankie's name,Including this place,Johnnie is probably the gone You fucking for Frankie's money....Fed time bitch, But your secret is safe with Me.. .But you are file,You are a shade tree bitch, And I gotta get My ass Home,But tell Bryna,Not to put My man in Ya'll love triangle!"

"Bye Katia... You are so much a very fascinating species. . Just ignorant!"She laughed,

I told Her,I would see Her later, He text message indicator beeped,And She text someone back,I walked through the back breezeway,As I turned the corner,I saw Emilio, I was sure He was going to Tiecey's house looking for Me...I waited until He beat on the door like a police officer,who was mad that the rookie ate the last donutStrangely enough she let's Him in and as I tiptoe to the door I knowq hear screaming between the two of them,

"Where is My damn wallet?!"

"Wallet?,Haven't seen it!"

" Bullshit! I had it last night when I got out of your bed ,And why the hell you texting Bryna?..."

I was immobile, Emilio was sleeping with Tiecey,? What the hell was this?I tried to bring this bitch down,First by screwing Johnnie broke ass....Then by telling Her Frankie was letting Johnnie come home,But She shrugged that shit off,But now I knew Why!...But I Am gonna chill until I find out who Bryna is,Maybe this would be My greatest chance at revenge....

I could still hear the shouting "I don't know who or what ya ass talking about....Bryna?....Who is that? Another jump off when I can't break My plans,That is fucked up!"

"FUCKED UP IS NOT EVEN WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO YA ASS.....CALL MY WIFE AGAIN,ACT LIKE IT.....!"

I stood frozen now....wife?.....When did that happen?...Bryna?.....I knew one way to find out.....I turned to hurry to My car....I dialed the number I wanted,"Nelly?...Who is Bryna?!!!.....Did You know this fool got married on Me?!!!!.....I Am not Frankie and He isn't Johnnie....!....."

She laughed and said"Nah.....You are far from being like Frankie.....Your situation is worse!"

"Bitch....I just found out Emilio been messing around with Tiecey!".....Today is not My best!.....But ummmm....You don't seem to be surprised about any of this !"

She chuckled,And said"Where are You?"

I replied"Just turned off Canteen Avenue,Why?"

"Meet You in Red Center....too much to spill over phone!"

"Alright,will be parked near basketball court!"

I hung up and waited with bated breath,Much larceny in My heart!

Nelly

Chapter 17

Ain't That Good News?!

I saw Katia sitting on a bench when I drove up,I know I was being messy but,Hell it took My mind off My problems,To have Katia smug ,Yet secretly , equally ratchet as Tiecey's ass is...That I do know ,As for Emilio....I was gonna let Katia know the play play life She has been leading with My cousin ,Was just a place to lay His head away from family life.

"Hey Katia!,What has You so upset?" I asked ,with play play concern(Lol inside)

She was fish fry hot!

"Did You know about Your cousin,And Tiecey fucking My man?!".....And who is this random Bryna bitch?"

"Slow ya roll....You are mad at Milio,Tiecey,And possibly Bryna....But do not....DO NOT..let that get your cradle rocked....FWith ya fake ass false confidence!"

She looked at Me with anger but,She knew better.

"How can Tiecey be so damn ratchet..This Ho is his Brother's baby mama!"

"Katia...You need to get ya shit together.....Emilio dated Tiecey before ,He passed Her off to Johnnie when someone alerted Him to the fact Tiecey was known for setting dope boys up,And setting up dumb asses for the fall!,Looks like You are wifey material,But not wife material,Bryna has that position,for 21 years.....!"

Katia looked like the life had been knocked out of Her ,She seemed to be going over the shit in her head....it was becoming apparent to Her...That She was indeed the jump off...Had been for years,All the time She was being abused,used,And discarded,And all this time this bitch was so vain.....Carly Simon said it best!

Katia said....."This shit....Why didn't You tell Me?!....I feel like a fool!"

"That was not My business,Hell how stupid can You be?... Everything about Your relationship should have been a warning sign....For instance....You were never his woman anywhere other than behind closed doors....Holidays are spent someplace other than with You,....When did You realize something was wrong? This man is a suppose to be making major dollars,Yet You Pay his bills..Come on!!!!....Married man....."

She just scrunched up Her face and began to cry like a baby...Her family was was between beet red and Egg plant purple....I let deliverAm,Aer cry on, Secretly happy that I had succeeded in making Her feel trifling.....Trust it was a feeling I too have known all too well...

Frankie

Chapter 18

A Change is Gonna Come

Johnnie has been trying his best to get back in My bed..But I Am too through with that,In fact I Am regretting I even let Him move in,But as I said,I wanted the kids to have a father figure,And like it or not Johnnie was their Dad,Asharay was not feeling Johnnie at all,As for the other two....They ignored his presence,And He paid them the same amount of attention.

"Johnnie,Did You pick up the items I asked You to get for Asharay's birthday party?!"

"Frankie...That kid has no friends,At least not any I would waste money on trying to feed and entertain other kids,When there are three here,And their asses are worrisome enough....!"

"Johnnie....The only reason,Your ass is in this house,Is to help Me give YOUR kids a better life...No let Me call it what it really is ...My children....At

least they will be mine..."

Johnnie looked at Me as if I had three heads..."What You mean?...YOUR kids?...So You just gonna keep Tiecey's children?.."

"To hell with that video hoShe does not give a damn about those kids.....!" Then to gut punch his ass I added "In fact... Tiecey doesn't give a damn about You either!"....So Yes,I Am petitioning the court to get legal custody And I wish You would try to bond with Them!"

He shook his head,And muttered "You can't take Tiecey's kids from Her.....!"

Now I was pissed off to the highest levelThis no good ass chick,dumps her precious children ,Off on Me.Without Me even knowing Her or without Her knowing the type of woman I Am?!....I love those children...And Like it or not ,They are here to stay!...."And Johnnie was sitting Here,Defending Her to Me....His wife..... The Way I was feeling....Why did I ever marry this child of a man?...But now I realize that I had the upper hand.....His freedom was In My power,And If I needed to...I would have his ass living in the lap of incarceration ,But truth be told,I regret the fact I ever let his ass back here,But I have not told Him about the D.A trying to bring charges against him for some other roguish ,In fact all manner of shit,But I Am his wife,And as long as I Am his wife,I cannot testify on anything,But truth be told,I Am about to put it on out there...I love Him,He is My husband,I knew He didn't love Me,But He came into My life at a time,When everything was caving in on Me,the death of My fiancée,And then the miscarriage,I wanted to die right along with them,I guess I feel as if I owed Him,And as long as He continued to act as if He was in love with Me,I was happy,But as soon as We were married.....He began showing His natural black ass,And was very verbally abusive,Of course,He knew better than to ever try to try to put hands to Me.....Simply because....He would get His ass killed.....He got up from the table and said "I just don't want You to put in time and Tiecey decided to come back for them!.....She just need to get Her head clear.....Plus...She left them here,Knowing I had no tolerance,And while You Mammy Her babies,I would run to Her....!"

I just shook My head....."Johnnie.....You sound like a clown....If You want a

divorce,Then so Be it,You wanna marry Tiecey and move on....do that to,AFTER You do Fed time,Because I will have Your ass locked up so long that You will think You kidnapped the Lindbergh Baby!"

He looked at Me as if He was about to bitch up and cry....

"See Frankie....This is the reason I Am never here..
. Babysitting and shit,And I guess sex is outta the question...Got Me sleeping in a damn bunkbed?....I Am your husband,And never get to make love to My own wife!"

"Well with that frame of mind..Why are You not having slut/scrub sex with Tiecey?.."

"Shit...it does cross My mind!..At least there are no kids running around,Not cut out for the daddy task You volunteered Me for....At least I could be getting satisfied...!

"Yeah... By a big bald inmate when I bring Your thieving ass down!...To hell with You and I Ever being intimate again!"

He shrugged His shoulders and said"What is My salary?"

"You better dead that shit...Not paying You anything but No Attention!"

He grabbed His jacket,And His phone caught His attention and from the angle I could see,And Although I was pissed,I was gonna wait until He leaves,To log into My bank account,Which I have not withdrawn anymore since buying the house,I saw the app on His phone from My bank account,I also wanted Him to make himself scarce,As I was expecting to have a night on the town,The kids were taken care of for the night ,With My Brother, DayDay,His wife Nora,And their kids,So even though I Am still legally married to Johnnie,I now realized,I no longer cared what He didn't have or did have,But I no longer cared,So I met this guy like two weeks ago,We met of all places at Applebee's, I was walking to My car with My carry out plate,And He graciously held the door for,He had the nicest smile imaginable, And the way that man looked in those genes...Whew... But as soon as I put the finishing touches on My lipstick, The doorbell

continued,.....Before I could say anything,I heard the front door slam again....Then banging on the door continued,Johnnie sat his stupid ass on the sofa watching Sausage Party laughing like a loon at that claymation bullshit!.....I took one look at Tee and I was ready to slam the door in Johnnie's face when He said"Dude....You got kryptonite or something up ya ass ?....This is My wife!"

Tee smirked,"Well like any other woman does she not get tired of Xbox playing negroes who think getting a blow job a form of employment.....Nigga ya best sit down and eat those damn munchies away with that big ass box of Frosted Flakes!"

Now it was funny,But I was taken aback as to how hood Tee became with JohnniI opened the door leaving that asshole to his silly putty movie....Not realizing,I was leaving with an even bigger asshole!e ,He seemed so articulate and stoic,But judging from his stance,He was a brother with a career,Good looks,And had a bit of money!,But something tells Me his ass went into the Armed Forces for a reason.....But as long as He treated Me with respect,We were cool,After all I had Asharay,Trinity,And J.J to consider,So just a date was all this was and trust.....I saw the same"Ain't shit" look in His eyes,He opened the car door,I got in He closed my door,I smelled the loud coconut air freshener and took a deep breath,This fool handed Me a pair of fur lined bedroom shoes,And asked"Could you please remove those stilettos until we reach the restaurant.....Carpet holds shoe prints forever,And Trena would never shut up?"

"Hold up?.....Trena?.....You are married?????"

He chuckled and said "No,Trena is just a lady I keep company with from time to time,...She decorated for Me,But to Her,I'm her Man...And I Am.....Shes just not My only woman!" He laughed as if He was either the court jester..Or the April Fool....I put My bet on the latter!

I was silenced...He kept talking about being an US Sargeant in the Army and could not see Himself being tied down a fourth time!

I gasped"Four times? You have been married four times?.....Damn what did You do?!"

That struck a nerve "I did what the fuck I wanted, Hell I have kids by My first three wives, None with the fourth, She died giving birth, Much to a gracious God!.... But you are not even gonna believe.... I met this fine ,gorgeous black woman, And I was gonna consider taking that plunge... She ruined it by getting pregnant twice!....

"So do you see that child?"

"Children.... she got pregnant again , Still no ring!.... Won't be one either.. tell you once you ladies become pregnant, You act sent from down below... Don't You?

"I have been pregnant once... Stillborn..... Years ago!"

"Sorry..... but see what You can accomplish by not having kids.... Well except the kid you married..... Was he crushed at the loss?"

"No, Because that baby was with My fiancée who died two months prior....!"

"Damn, You get a reprieve and You married the Hood's answer to Brian J. White?!" He laughed!

Finally We were ready to eat, And I would have been grateful that a mouthful of food would keep him on hush mode.... but it didn't, ALL it did was produce food particles reaching My plate..... Beyond disgusted I heard a voice saying, "Now what bitch you tricking off now?"

I raised My head and looked dead in the eyes of My girl, Nelly!

"Frankie?... How do you know My kids no good ass deadbeat daddy?!"

Katia was smirking, And that pissed Me off.... Tee broke the ice" Nelly dismiss Me with that, I pay for My kids... Although they just as ignorant as you are!"

I said "Nelly.... I had no idea...."

"Girl, You good.....its this lying sneaking dog ass niggaDamn near 25 years of sneaking, Then He divorces first wife, still fucking Me, Divorced again....still fucking Me...Became a widower, Still didn't marry Me!....So I know You would never go there, But His ass.....!"

He stood up and pulled Me along...."Francesca, We have other plansto

I told him straight up "Naw.....I'm good....wouldn't have worked anyway, You love Yourself far too much for anyone else to need to, Frankie, I'm rolling with You !"

"Cool ! Let's go.....!"

Katia on the other hand said "Yo ass is foul Tee.....Take it from both Nelly and Myself.....You would have been very disappointed!

Needless to say.....Katia would be finding transportationAnd I would be wanting answers..

"Nelly, You always told Me Your kids father was dead?!"

She scoffed "He is.....At least to My family....."

I was confused, "Why?.....Do these girls know He is alive?"

"Yeah.....It just disappoints them so....that He is Not!" then she laughed, followed by some form of alcohol belch!

"I really hate going home, Especially since NoNo has the kids for the weekend.....I love them like My own but....this is draining, And to hear Johnnie always stick up for the no good ass hoe who just left them on Me....the woman whose husband they were conceived during the marriage.....Now He is threatening to have them placed in a foster home!....How can a man be so cruel?.....I love those kids....Trinity is so attached to Me that even though Johnnie is home again, He has to sleep in the guestroom....."

All of a sudden the car stopped.....Scrrrrreeeechhh!

"You better get that bastard the hell outta My brother's house!....Are you fucking crazy?...I mean you paid for it....But why you let his slimy ass in Arceneau's house?!.....He and Tiecey really got your head fucked up!"

"He is there so the kids can have two parents,....."

"Hell....they do....two parents who don't care a damn about them....You know damn well those kids never knew stability until You came into their lives.....He lived with Emilio and Katia ass after Tiecey and kids got evicted,And trust that was not a welcome situation at all,Katia ass hit Asharay so hard one day for spilling soda their black carpet,Of course the lie they told the doctor who set Her broken arm she had fallen down the stairs,The doctor bought the story all of ten minutes before denouncing Tiecey as an abusive parent,Although Katia had done the deed,That little girl was but two years old,But Katia despised that child,So Asharay was put in the care of Tiecey's mom,Miz Shirley Ann,until Tiecey got through the parenting classes!"

"Why was Johnnie not locked up too?"

"Oh He was,Locked up,bandaged up,And beat up by Emilio!"

I was livid.....so I said "Damn I left My car keys at the restaurant,Swing back by!".....

She did a quick u turn, Probably wondering if Katia ratchet ass had left with Tee smug ass,But as we pulled up ,The two of them were drunk...And fawning all over each other!

"Stop the car!" Now why I said it was very unnecessary,Because She had already screeched to a halt,

With their backs to us on the way to Tee's car ,we crept silently,As Katia

was being escorted into the car I called out in a disguised homegirl ratchet shake ya hand sleep with ya man type that Katia had proven Herself to be....."Aaaayyye Katia!.....Where ya ass been at lately?"

I heard her giggle" heeeeyyyy girl.....Who is you?!"

Before anyone could say a word I pounced on Her ass..."It ain't a two year old Asharay that's for sho!" I punched Her in Her stomach,She double over falling to Her knees,Then I jumped on her back as she went flat....I beat that bitch like I needed to whip up a plate of green eggs and ham.....She managed managed to get a handful of my hair which is real,Unlike the horse she had robbed and scalped.....When she did thatit freed My hands enough to dig into my pocket,I fumbled until I found what I was looking for My Bic lighter And clicked it on that ponytail.....I hadn't seen a person's hair lacquered down with so much gel ignite so fast.....This bitch was fortunate it was just a clip. But it was a low budget version of Michael Jackson's Pepsi accident.....She stopped,dropped and rolled as I kicked her up and down her body,.....When I was satisfied,I stomped out the burning fake ponytail.....I turned around and saw Nelly surprised that I could be so violent,But so was I ,This was not My nature,But thinking of Asharay.....Trinity,and Lil J.J brought out such rage!....I will be damned if anyone touches them!

Nelly and I made it back to her car just in time to hear Tee tell Katia"Nah.....You got your ass beat by a chick over something You did to a kid,That ain't even Hers!.....Or Yours!.....Silly Ho.....Get to ya walk!"

I wanted to laugh but I had already beat her down, But what wasn't gonna happen was Me letting another female get dogged by a dog,And Tee was a mangy ass hound dog!.....Nelly obviously felt the same way as Metra We saw Tee burn rubber.....Nelly stopped the car,And I yelled"Get your dumb ass in the car!....Just don't say shit to Me at this moment,But before tonight is over.....Your ass is gonna tell Me what the fuck Tiecey and Johnnie are up to?!....You hear Me??....Or do I have to incinerate the real naps!"

She nodded,And way off to Nelly's house We would go!
T

Katia
Chapter 19

Meet Me at Mary's Place

Yes,What choice did I have to ride with these two bitches,But I couldn't dare go home,Not looking like the black Rhonda Rousey!And admit that Frankie's little black Barbie ass did it,Was not gonna happen,I could use this time to two advantages,to have time to make up a lie to tell Emilio who jumped on My ass....Then call and tell Bryna about him fucking Tiecey....Naw fuck that....Fucking Me and Tiecey...See how far that nigga gets after she sends her band of geechies from Charleston to fuck Him up,And then just to add to shits and giggles,Fuck Frankie's ass at the same time.....So since Nelly's two brats had a sleepover,Nelly decided that She,Frankie,And Myself would be staying at Nelly's Mother's house,which was not really what I wanted to do,But hell,My ass was beat....And who could say they weren't taking Me there to finish My ass off....So I just played the victim,which was not a hard being that Nelly hated her cousins Emilio and Johnnie just as much as I do.....

When we reached Miz Mary's I had flashbacks,of Arceneau's death,Although it looked the same,I felt weird going inside,After all they had no idea what had been between Arceneau,Only Johnnie did,And He should have been worried,just as much I was had sudden memories of,But right now,I was on My bitch shit,And I was still waiting to break Frankie!

As Nelly opens the door,Her Mom was on her way to bed with a tray of snacks for Her and Mr.Blye...She saw us,or should I say, Me,And was flabbergasted....I knew I was looking dogged out...But she yelled "Kylo," which is Mr.Blye's first name... Nelly and Frankie,looking like she was Tina Turner from Beyond the Thunder Dome...Mr.Blye came into the room in some damn Dr.Suess Cat in the Hat pajamas!...He looked and bellowed"Get that slut outta My God dammed House!....You two cent ho got My son Killed! "

Frankie and Nelly were almost as clueless as I was, But I was guilty ,....and it was gonna get worse before the night was over!

"Daddy, why are you coming at Katia like that, You can't blame Her for what Emilio did!....I mean Bryna, His wife, can and probably does!..."

"To hell with Emilio....I mean Fuck Him too...But it is Johnnie's Bitch Ass who is at fault.....!" then He looked from Nelly to Frankie and got a gleam in his eye and said" Oh hell .. Y'all plan to kill this slut and expect Me to take the blame? " he burst out laughing....We can say She tried to trick with Me, And We got caught, So I killed her?!... Nobody gonna believe that....We will say Mama did it over jealousy.....Y'all girls kill Me....You all need to be fucking them dudes up instead of each other.....And Nelly You My daughter and all but twenty one years and two kids He ain't gonna marry you...stop lying, He ain't dead, Me and Uncles, Tom and Leroy beat him badly years ago, but He ain't dead...And He knows He has one more year in your life, After that last gal goes off to school....I better not even smell him in Greer, Unless he is with this hussy right here if He ain't already did it....And Frankie....You take to two fools Johnnie and Tiecey to court and get those babies , Then move on with Your life and let Tiecey, Johnnie and Emilio keep their little to themselves....Don't worry when Tiecey ain't pleasing both brothers sexually...Oh I forgot Katia You and Johnnie got a little thang too....the one that got my son killed!

You could have heard a rat pissing on cotton!

Nelly

Chapter 20

Twisting The Night Away

I stood shocked ...Who wouldn't?... Had My Dad been a mental patient escapee who has evaded the Patrick B.Harris facility!.... I was crushed,I never wanted them to know I have been Tee's toilet paper,But the real shit was a big ass box My Mom came back with papers that seemed to be a thirty year keepsake,She slammed down the picture of My late brother Arcenau standing in front of the house that Frankie now owned,But was My brother's first purchased house....He was glowing,Along with My other brother,His twin,Arsenio,But to both My and Frankie's surprise,And Katia's horror,a chick on his arm,flossing an engagement ring,a closer look revealed the wedding ring Frankie now wore,But at the time was on My brother's "secret" fiancée,Katia had her herpes lips on My brother,While the whole time,My cousin Emilio's eyes were on Her Ass!,Frankie looked at the diamond ring set she wore,And looked as if She was thinking"I wonder how this fool afforded this,and ain't paid shit else since" look...or Maybe she thought He had hit a lick....shit to be honest I was proud of his slug had not stolen and pawned it!

Then Mom asked"Where the hell is My Grandbaby?....You know the one that got Arceneaux to propose to you,And buy You a house? "

Katia whimpered,"I had a miscarriage after Arcenauax was killed,I was devastated!"

My Daddy got angry and said "Lying ass bitch!.....My son Arsenio and his wife Sonji are raising Her as their own....even after DNA proved Johnnie to be the father! "

Frankie looked a bit green around the gills,My Dad said"Francesca, just because You suffered two horrific tragedies within months....You didn't have to go for Johnnie.....You needed a man...Not a boy who thinks He can....And truth be told Daughter Dearest here,shoulda have put you up on game.....!"

Frankie trying to release her now tarnished memory of her wedding bands from Her finger,clearly,once being Katia's made them trash to Frankie.....but once she worked them off,Katia reached for them,,And as she received them she was kicked in the ass by My Mama!.....I was like damn.....should I do research on John Gotti's secret hitmen.....Frankie and I were rolling....I mean she hit that table facedown in My Dad's cornflakes ,which Mama was taking him on the way when We arrived,milk dripping down her face My Dad said,Aww hell if those penal facials ain't killed ya a little milk ain't gonna hurt....You ain't even pretty.....!" Katia decided to

take Her anger out on Frankie, See this bitch thought since Frankie was not a blood relative, that All of us would walk a dog on Her Ass!

"Frankie, You are pathetic, You oughta see the apartment Johnnie has Tiecey's ass living in off ya dead fiance money? Hell them kids might go back to them anyway, Because the way Your husband been keeping Her ass in a loft, in Pelham, You want be able to feed the bastards anyway.....stupid....AND Yo ass buying Me another ponytail!....shit was human hair!"

"Then why didn't it grow from ya nappy head.....uuuuu.....just ugly !"
Daddy said as He and Mama began their third bowl of frosted flakes.....Yea....Mama and Daddy use "Medicinal" marijuana....don't even try it....what y'all folks when you are not around, So keep it to APARTMENT .

Katia just looked at Frankie, And asked Her "If you were all that, Johnnie would not have talked You into marrying Him, Just to keep his ass from being locked the fuck up!....You know that nigga never stopped messing with Tiecy!...Truth be told You ain't just raising his kids ,YOU.. ARE PAYING FOR THAT NICE ASS LOFT APARTMENT SHE IS LIVING IN!" Then she began to look as if She were laughing but She was crying, and.....choking! Frankie had a tight grip on Katie's neck.....that had My brother, Arsenio had not walked in to seemingly helping My Dad break them up...But Daddy was choking Katia too....Asking " Can you breathe you trashy bitch?....Huh??...Huh???...Well neither can My son.....Bitch!".....finally, after gasping....My mom not budging to get things under control....She actually looked pissed that Senio, broke up the ass beating! After a minute Frankie huffed and asked Katia figured out Johnnie was paying for a place to lay his Baby's mama.....Katia said, "I have proof....just gotta wait until Emilio isn't home, I have all type of shit she has paid for with a card in your name.....Just gotta wait until He goes out..... Arsenio said " Fuck that, Let's go now!"
Katia sputtered "But He has no idea I have these,.....We gotta wait until He leaves!"

My mom just laughed "Girl.....you have plenty of time.....That boy is in Charlestonwith his Wife!.....!"

Katia hung Her head "Let's go!.....!"

This night had so many twist and turns to it that even I had no idea what else they had been keeping hidden for so long, But what We would find out would-be the makings of a broken family!

Emilio
Chapter 21

Sentimental Reasons

I should break Tiecey's neck!....This dumb bitch has been calling Bryna telling my fucking business.Literally!....As I listened to this crusty lipped Ho snore....Realizing thatHold. Up....You know this is the perfect time for Me to kill this Ho right?.....But now I had bigger problems.....And Bryna was the first person on My mind,She is My wife,And the mother of four of My kids,And whereas beauty is skin deep,It helped Me overlook the fact that the prettiest thing about Bryna....is Her name....Well now that has changed,....My kids and I make her beautiful.,But inside I felt like the Devil's Son in law,Because I married Bryna for the traditional reason.,... Her Dad,His shotgun,And Her brothers.....See,My stupid ass brother Johnnie got Me involved in some deep shit back in the day,And was going behind My back,Collecting money for product We didn't already have,by time I found out,It was either pay back money or product I decided to break camp and leave his ass out to dry.....But by then Bryna and her sacred virginity had been given to Me a very expensive outcome, Our oldest daughter,Goddess was on the way....And although I admit, I Am a piece of shit Dad, When My daughters, Goddess,Empress, and Virtue,are old enough to marry....They better stay away from guys like Me,Now My son,Whom I myself personally named, Emilios Pride Richards,Because He is actually named that due to the fact,I Am instilling into Him what I always needed instilled into Me....And that is pride,And of all My kids(I am sure there are a few out there ,I only claim the ones with Bryna...the ones who are the source of My paper stacking higher and higher,Only....Because It would be very gainful for Me,Financially, Physically, But sexually,I had to learn to accept the fact,I was married to Bryna,And I knew I had to try to give the marriage a try at least,But along comes Tiecey,She was working at this club in Charleston ,But lived in Greer SC,My hometown, So I started kicking it with Her ,And when "business" kept Me traveling between Greer and Charleston and there began the problem....Tiecey was a golddigger from your average blaxploitation movie....You know the kind that acts second rate,and much different in behavior than a woman you would even

consider marrying, You know the jump off who does not know She is the jump off.....The "You aint got ta lie Craig ...You ain't got ta lie !.."" So after Johnnie came back to Greer, After a 30 day incarceration from a charge in Charlelike,, So one night We all hit the club. . I already knew Tiecey would do just about anything I asked of Her...And the plan was for Her to meeting Johnnie and Me at Club Sunnyside Bar and Grill.....I was just planning to dump My side chick on Johnnie, He is My flesh and blood, So you know that nigga got game(No Homo), What he doesn't have is My intelligence or game, So I knew as long as He looked good, And looked as if He was on my level.....She would be on Him like

Kim Kardashian has been on every baller from Reggie Bush to Kanye West!....What I had slipped into both their champagne glasses, It would be easy to let the festivities begin, I would find them together, And use that as the reason to cut Her ass off.. As for Johnnie...

He was simply gonna be a pawn until I was ready for,...Henson what night I should have counted My blessings and ran from infidelity, But as game recognizes game, Ho recognized Ho, And with Tiecey that night was a head on lookalike of Taraji P. Henson

Attitude , And with Her was this chick named Katia, Who was a light skinned version of Gabrielle Union....And then , Or should I say a b movie version, But I would soon find out Katia was engaged to be married. ...And I was gonna step and respect her situation, Hell no use in ruining two marriages, Mine, And the one She had coming up, But when I discovered her fiancée was My cousin Arceneau Blye, And I knew then I had to have Her, At least once, But I guess one ride on the Stallion, She was feeling like she had just ridden into First Place in the Kentucky Derby, And I was Her very own Alydar....Yet, Just like the renowned stallion, I was being brought down on My knees, Until She too started acting all *"Wifey*" I kept My marriage secret, So on the sly....I would spend days or weeks with Her, At least when in Greer I had a place to lay My head. . So I never told Her about My marriage either, But somehow, I was not standing to lose Her to Arceneaux, But this bitch played Me! ...So laying here in Tiecey's bed....I felt no shame, No breaking the bro code, So You know damn well My cousin's feelings did not , Especially this particular cousin.....But this dumb bitch is the reason Arceneaux is dead, And it was Katia's fault, As well As My brother Johnnie.....He is the one to put Me up on game, But I didn't trust Johnnie either, See the moment My boys and Me were out handling the situation on boys to fuck Arceneaux up, While My brother played lookout for My place , And true to the fact, He was watching it alright, And screwing Katia at the same time, And it had been Johnnie, Whom I shot at but missed.....Well, My brother dodged the bullet, His punk ass jumped out of the window leaving

Me standing face to face with My once fave cousin Arcenau,Who mistakingly thinking I was on his side,One shot deemed him wrong, Katia screamed as if She had no idea who I was,until I pulled off my mask and hoodie...Weeks later,This bitch starts showing symptoms of pregnancy.....I couldn't have that shit,She has been fucking Me,My Brother,And My man Sean,And she wanted to claim it to be My kid!....I don't believe in abortion,What I did do was kill two birds with one stone,She had plans with Sean that night, But I called saying I was gonna be late,Like 11:30 pm before I would be home...then I text Sean 911 asking Him to check on Katia,so far along in her pregnancy,His ass went as I requested, Hoping Johnnie would cap him before I got there. To this day Johnnie owes Me big time,And soon Frankie will get what she deserves,when you marry random !look good two days outta the week,Things could only go up!!!! Am I right,? Truth be told it is cool to have a brother that looks just like Yourself.....We are not twins,But even our Mom used to get us confused,.....Like Frankie did,.....But she was vulnerable, And believed every word I said to Her when I told Her that I knew she really needed to keep Johnnie out of jail,And She would not live the rest of her days Like Demi Moore did in the movie "Ghost" So I told Johnnie that Frankie saw Him the night our crew hit those pawn and jewelry shops that she had witnessed,I had already made it clear that I knew or lied as I told Her,it was Johnnie she had seen that day....She fell for it,But after they got together, He thought she was gorgeous....just not his type,But he realized She came from money,And that was all she wrote for Johnnie,Money.....But He never left Tiecy alone....neither did I,All was good with Me until I found out the dirty bastard was screwing My main Jump off!!! ,Katia....and it turned My stomach everyday to think of even see that bitch breathing, So this is why I just did the most disrespectful shit one spouse could do to another.....bring another woman into our maritable bed,Even more disrespectful that the chick snoring beside Me is,Tiecey.....But fuck it.,.I Am one and done with Her ass,And just as I was telling Myself I didn't give a damn,And I didn'tthat is until I heard four loud,Boom,Boom,Boom sound,then the splint of the door being kicked off the hinge!

Fuck! Katia and Her Soul Food eating pops,And My cousin,Arsenio,If looks could kill!

Tiecey

Chapter 22

I Don't Want To Cry

I have not one idea,Who is banging on Emilio's door...And had no intention of finding out! This was scaring Me shitlessUntil I recognized one voice as being Katia's... Now Your average chick would have felt,bogus,dirty,and Ratchet, But I, My Dearest Bitches Am not Your average chick,After this chick sneak clowned on Me today....I wanted Her to know that I was that bitch....that bitch who just screwed who was as She thought was once Her man,in where she ONCE laid Her Yakky 101B weave wearing head....So as I stepped out of the bedroom on tiptoe.....Come on now....Y'all know for Me to even have a prayer of shipping Her ass it would have to be a sneak attack,I mean I can't fight Her fair....And mess up My cuteness....No Way.....but once I saw Mr.Mr.Blye,And Arsenio I decided to keep quiet,So I could hear of a crooked plan and sell info,like I did when Arcenaux was murdered,Just as Katia did.....But the more listened,I heard Emilio sobbing about not knowing why Katia had left Him,Then I could see Arsenio crack Emilio across the head with the butt of a revolver and seeing this Mentally,Verbally and physically abusive ,At least to Me ,But I used to hear it being said,A man who beats women can't fight worth a damn....Somebody better testify!!!

But What I didn't notice was that Katia had left the room until I saw Her coming back with a big ass box of what looked as if it was stuffed with letters to Santa!

She walked over to Arsenio,And handed Him this big ass box,And He looked sad,then confused,Which suddenly turned to rage! He took his gun and beat Emilio across his head twice,Then before He aimed the gun to shoot Him,Mr.Blye yelled his name"ARSENIO!...SONIT WONT BRING HIM BACK!" Then He himself kicked Emilio twice in the stomach,But before turning to leave He said"All those damn beers.....I gotta piss...!'.He pulled down his pants far enough to give Him enough aim to splash piss running down Emilio's face!

Having been standing in hiding so long,I was shocked to hear Katia,Even from a distance I could tell She had recently gotten Her ass beat.....As she left out with Nelly's crazy ass mafioso Brother and Dad she

whimpered, "Don't worry Tiecey.....You won't be homeless, This is My house....You may want to go and check and see if Your shit is safe and secure!" Then slammed the door behind Her!.....Wtf was she talking about ? Not a damn thing in that box had shit to do with Me!...

Johnnie

Chapter23

I'll Come Running Back To You

I don't know what Frankie thinks this shit is...But that bullshit with another dude darkening My doorstep to take My wife on a damn date,And now Frankie has decided not to answer Her phone,Well guess what bitch ...if You just using Me as a stand in of a Dad that situation of Tiecey dropping those kids off here,And Her ass just not beating Tiecey ass and selling those kids to some old couple who can't have kids,Or the Barnyard Flea Market, Then two can play Her game so I knew the one thing I could do to hurt Her is to convince Tiecey's ass to take those kids back from Her,And that is exactly what I had to do,And I knew Tiecey would only be down with the plan,even if She left them off on someone after I pay Her to take them back,Frankie has no legal rights if Tiecey can pull off the act I knew she could then I would be even because since the only reason I married Her ass in the first place was because She saw Me the night the robbery went down,That bitch had My ass in a clutch,But now that We have been married over seven years,If We divorced it would not be to My best interest, Because I Am sure My ass is still not yet in the clear,So After trying to call Tiecey My phone rang,It was My boy Peanut, He sounded very anxious

"Aye J!...I heard some old heads ran up in your brother's house and beat His Ass somethin'Awful !"

Now I was confused"Nut ,Man go on,You know Emilio ain't let nobody beat him down!"

"I'm just the messenger, Don't shoot My ass for warning You!,Said Ol' Girl

Katia set Him up,And the bitch and Nelly's brother and dad left with a big ass box of papers!"

Now I was mad.....Katia ass set My brother up....I began ranting"Bitter Bitch probably found out about Bryna,Emilio's wife,in Charleston....I swearKatia better get as ghost as can be right now!

Peanut chuckled, "Yea there was a ho there with Him.....Tiecey!"

I saw red then, Because I should have known....Tiecey acting stupid and brand new on Me after everything, And all the money I had been stealing from Frankie and sending to Her ass.....But that was cool too,...Tiecey back in the day is known to be a forger,So that much I knew I could pin Her with,And the fact She signed Frankie's name on the lease on the loft,would only solidify that She found out how to get into Frankie's account,Yea,I would maybe be shunned by I the others as cheater of the world, Tiecey's ass would be one and gone,And then I could breathe a bit easier...Leave it to Peanut to spoil it by saying "And they said on the news today Ya case has been reopened, A new witness came forth Man!"

Frankie
Chapter 23

A Heart free from pain

Bryna made it to Greer in time to get Emilio out of the house that She obviously knew about,But the fact that She came to His rescue made Me feel sorry for Her,Until I realized I was the same way when it came to Johnnie, I realize ...I don't love Johnnie,But I do love the kids and I Am now their legal guardian,And it was via Tiecey that I got custody, See That night when Katia and Nelly's Dad and Brother had contained evidence that She had been receiving money from My Account via Johnnie,Yet She claimed that Emilio told Her that He was giving Johnnie the money to give Her,So she thought Emilio really cared for Her,But Katia to Her credit did

stand alongside Me,And Nelly and CCP court appointed lawyer,Dellanie Fleming as I was awarded full custody of the kids,Although it May have seemed strange ,Because Johnnie was not present at the hearing,And it would have made no difference,once Emilio decided to try to right a wrong,He testified and showed proof that He was 99.9% the father of Asharay,Trinity,And J.J.,It actually touched My heart when the three kids were asked by the children How things were with Me?.....Usually they refer to Me as Mommie Frankie,But they simply said"We love being with Mommie...."As usual the judge called them up one by one and said,I declare You,Asharay Natalia Richards,Trinity Greta Richards,And Johnathan Jerrell Richards ,Jr....!

Lil J.J. spoke "Mommie....the nice man you say died before You met ,and then the angels came and took your baby to heaven?!"

I cried a bit ,But kissed his little face ,And for the first minute there was silence,Then My son spoke,"My name is Tye Jr,is that OK Mommie,I looked towards Dellanie who had already discussed this with My little man,And Tiecey,Who felt it was the least She could do,But I Am not vindictive She can visit the kids anytime she wants,After She is released from Her ten to fifteen year sentence ,Hell ...I Am not that forgiving! Now as Nelly prepares to take My kids to A fun day at the park,I had one more stop to make,And that was by another part of the courtroom,Johnnie had tried to run to Atlanta but was caught speeding,And since His case had reopened they held Him until it was his court date, Which was today,And He has done nothing but call Me collect,Dumb ass begging Me to just come in and be supportiveAnd I Am Katiartive.....Of Asharay,Trinity,And Lil Tye! Johnnie can take the slow fall to Hell for as far as I was concerned....I tried to be amicable and offer him a divorce,And let Him be a man for once and take the blame for what He is Accused Of doing!

X

Johnnie

Chapter 24

Fools Paradise

It has been two weeks since I found out how Tiecey,Katia,And Emilio My

own blood brother....Frankie not only got custody of the kids,Which turned out to be You guessed it Emilio's....But the tee hee came for His ass when Arceneaux's family located Katia's family, The child she had given birth to were also product of My brother,Emilio, Nelly's parents reached out to Katia's and they are getting to know this child as if He were their natural grandson,Katia's twin sister,Stacia ,Had been raising the child,And as For Frankie,She kept having a Constable serve Me divorce papers but I knew My rights,As long as it had not been delivered into My hand... I was not served,And if I didn't show up....Frankie couldn't divorce Me,Or testify,But As You know all women are sneaky,But despite Her beauty,intelligence, And golden heart, Frankie was living in play play world....So I see it as She used Me to get over Her dead fiancé and their child which She lost,I gave Her a reason to give Her heart to someone,And because of that....Whatever My fate..,She was still My wife,And could not testify against Me,So I sat proud at the defense table,When this beautiful young lady walked into the courtroom ,Dressed in green....To match the color of the money She had to Be making...She walked past Me,And winked.....I was about to have an anxiety attack wondering why Frankie had not been accepting My calls to let Me know whether or not She was gonna show up at My trial,Soon I felt a rush of relief as Frankie came into the courtroom looking great ,But when She sat beside the pretty young lady. ..I knew something was up,But the pretty young lady got up,,walked out,I was thinking Frankie had checked the chick for looking at Me,And the chick simply left,At least By appearing,it solidified the concept that I was running things,With that in mind,I asked the public defender, If I could go to the restroom,As We got up to go,,I was happy! Frankie was still a fool in love,But after I got off from this charge,I was gonna get ghost on Her ass.....I walked out of courtroom,And ran right smack into this beauty who I was gonna conquer once My case is thrown out,I stopped beside Her,And temporarily free of shackles,I let out My Mack finesse...

"I Am Johnnie Richards,And You are Gorgeous!"

She blushed and extended her hand"And I Am Dellanie Fleming!.....Then with a wink,The guy she was with ,whom I hadn't noticed before, He extended His hand to Me and said"And I Am Larry D.Young,And You have just been served!" He gave Me a set of papers,Informing Me that although I never collected the divorce papers,They were official!....Frankie and Johnnie ,Are no longer sweethearts!.I wacs crushed to realize that at the time I was evading the law ,My brother Emilio,who seemingly had no ill

will towards Me, actually helped Frankie set Me up....

The prosecutor played a recording of Emilio telling Frankie,

"There is a \$5.000 reward out to whomever turns Johnnie in,He may be a thieving backstabbing snake,but I Am kind of the blame for that,He is My brother, I can't turn Him in.....But You can.....let him come home to lay low at home.....!!"

I was grinning thinking I was winning,At least brotherhood meant more to him than A Thot in the hood...Bros over hoes!

Until I heard Frankie ask"Are You stupid?!....He is not upsetting the life of these kids,I Am not subjecting them to Johnnie and His uncaring uncle mode!"

Emilio cut her off mid sentence"Let Him come home,You and the kids stay at your parents house a few days,Call the police turn Him in,That way after He is captured....You get that money towards the kids bank account....!"

I was so damn happy the day Frankie had actually let Me come home....I had no idea She was so deceptive,It was cool for two days,When She said She and the kids were gonna spend the weekend with Her parents since the kids hadn't seen them in a while!.....I was glad to see them go,So the next day,As I was talking to Frankie about Her parents visit ,The chick in bed with Me woke up ,Went down the hall to the bathroom.....I heard a car,then another,But paid no attention until I heard whispering, Then this dumb hoe Katia,stood smiling

As she pointed Me out to the officer!.....As they cuffed Me and walked Me to the car,My stupid ass cousin Nelly high fives Katia,And said" Well it was the least You can do!"

I Am locked down now but I only got five years.....And when I do get out,I Am gonna get My own revenge on each.....

But for now,I Am just another sound of the man working on the chain gang.....

To Be Continued

Coming Soon!



Cousin Of Mine

Kennedy Brown



Cousin Of Mine!

Kennedy Brown

Tyler

Grandfather's Clock

When I was not yet four years old, When I met My best friend, Will Harris, My paternal great grandfather, He moved in with us after My Great Grandmother Theretha passed away, after 45 years of marriage, Of Course, Other family members could have taken Him in, He was a grief stricken man who built His whole world around Grandma Teretha, And fell into a deep depression when She died, However, It was My parents Who never once hesitated to take him into our home, After all not once had My parents and I even run into any other kids, sibling, or Grandkids visiting ...not once, However asks soon as Pop Will took the last of his clothing with Him, two weeks later as We went to His house one last time to put his belongings in storage, Only to see a For Sale sign being taken down by My dad's

pregnant for the fourth time,By her fourth dude,And had just taken up residence in Papa Will's house,And had claimed everything youngest sisterThat day I realized that Papa Will was no pushover,He went into his bedroom ,pulled up a floorboard,And retrieved a shotgun.....Before He could aim it.....Cousin's next baby daddy to be had hauled ass faster than Jesse Owens in the Olympics, Needless to say Aunt Kealena ran after his ass,Something She still does until this day.....Trifling ass.... But now My Papa Will has been gone a long time,And He left his ceiling high,Handcrafted Grandfather's clock,Made by My Great Great Granddad Old Will,I love this antique and it brought back so many memories of talks I had with Papa Will,Many conversations were about women,Such as “Boy never have sex with someone that You would not want to be seen with,Because they will be the one to go after you until the old keep a Nigga baby is on it's way!”

Now as I sit here thinking about the bold faced lie I had told My wife,This is the one time I Am glad Shari didn't associate with My parents much,Since they had mostly moved out of State,While Shari and I still live in Greer ,Due to My job with Her Family's business.....But if Shari finds

out Our houseguest, My pregnant cousin Erin, Is not My cousin at all....in fact She is a one night stand....or was supposed to be...But when She called and told Me She was pregnant, And then became a bitch once I told Her I was married, And then she threatened My marriage, and career by revealing a sex tape from a threesome with her and another chick fucking Me!...Her parents had kicked Her out not giving a damn if she had no place else to go...I had no choice but to talk Shari into believing Erin was the black sheep of the family,....I felt bad but it was too damaging to My world, Which meant more to Me than Shari's opinions, Truth be told, I had convinced Her that I had a vasectomy when We first met, Guess that shit was karma....And I was gonna need two ply toilet to wipe with...the expensive kind that only keeping My high paying job can afford.....At this moment the clock chimed, Signaling another hour...But really it was Papa Will's spirit saying to Me...."I Told You!!."

Erin

Summertime.....And The Living is Easy

Please don't let Tyler convince You all that All I was to him was a one night stand,I have met each and every immediate family member he has, And could agree with what He told Me his wife held in opinion on them....Straight up snobbish and ignorant long line of bastards smartly dressed as classy as could be!...His wife is the only person I could give a damn about being in Tyler's life right now!,And I wanted her ass gone before this baby gets here,Because if not,Baby and I will be homeless,When My parents met Tyler,they were distant towards him,And finding out He was a married man of five years they forbade Me to see him,By then it was too late,So was My monthly menstrual cycle,And once My parents found out....I was out,But before My Mom,Trina put Me out,She used the ruse of helping Me pack My bags,Only to tell Me to get Tyler's wallet in check and blackmail him to set Me up in a nice place,Or else threaten to tell

Shari!.....But I knew if He put Me into a place of My own....I would hardly see him,He was already breaking dates with Me,Plus My Mom stood beside My father two days ago as He labeled Me a whoremonger,who has no morals ,And soon to be forming My own Baby Daddy club!.....But it was My Mom,Who told Me to get pregnant on Tyler in the first place,Just to secure an 18 year financial securityBut to Me,I wanted more, deserved more....And was gonna have more,It is still so amazing that Tyler actually had Shari believing He was moving Me into their home while I was pregnant, Convinced Her that I was his cousin,The black sheep of the family....And although She hesitated before relenting I had come to the conclusion in My thesis, This shit was gonna be too easy....Especially knowing that Tyler is not feeling being under the same roof as both his wife Shari,But,convincing Her that I was the cousin was much easier than I thought it would be.....Shari.....Poor little clueless Shari!

Shari

God Bless The Child!

I never cared for Ty's family, And although I agreed to let his hot in the ass pregnant younger cousin ,Erin move in with us....I already know, I Am not gonna care for her anymore than I do the others, But it was bad that Her own parents kicked Her out...And although She never asked ,She could have stayed with My in laws, And they never volunteered,Now She is living under My roof and somehow ...Tyler is much uneasy with the situation!

When she showed up and introduced Herself to Me as Erin,Explaining She was Ty's cousin,actually and apparently the black sheep,Whose uptight asses kicked Her out when they found out She was pregnant,I believed Her,Because Ty had some fake ass uppity relatives,And just the fact they treated Her the same way they *try* to treat Me,But to Me it didn't stop my shine not one iota that Ty's family didn't care for Me,So yes,I could relate.But when Ty got home He wasn't surprised that She was there, It was more like He didn't *want* Her there,Which was odd because separately

they praised each other as the other's fave cousin, But I know Ty, And He didn't come across as if He wanted Her there... I bet His Mom is mad that He would reach out to Erin, And that was the reason He was a bit uneasy.....I swear I think Ty was secretly hoping I would say No when He initially asked Me, If We could take his cousin in?, She was young, And pregnant from some married dude who had said ,Later for Ya !...

And now Ty is really feeling the regret to letting Erin get those Zoo Zoos He calls his family into Her bullshit.....And they still think it didn't stink!

Erin

Cupid

Trust and believe I really hate to put Ty in to this, But had He been upfront with Me when We met for the first time, He would not be getting his ass into these situations, Yes, I Am pregnant with his child , Funny thing is He was supposedly single until I gave him the news, But truth be told We were together only a few times that He seemed to show interest in Me, Basically, after He knew He could sleep with Me whenever He wanted to, He became distant but the first time We met was through a mutual friend...

“Hey, Did You go to School with a guy named Jalan Foster?” He asked Me as My girl, Ashley and I sat at the bar where He was waiting on his drink,

“No ,replied Ashley,” You have Me confused with someone else!” She smiled.

“You are kinda right.....But it is You who are confused,Because I was asking Your Friend,Not You!” He sneak dissed.

I smiled at Him,Because Ashley always got the attention whenever we were out together,Simply because she was a blocking ass chick!

“Uh Uh Rudeness!” I beamed.

“Well how could You know Him? ...Just made up a name as a reason to talk to You!”

Ashley sucked her teeth and mumbled loudly “Stupid Negro!”.....

He heard Her and was about to say something else when Ashley yanked Me away from Him....”Erin....don't be stupid!....That dude is here all the time and now that He has a few dudes with him,And liquored up...He now wants your attention.. Bring ya ass on!...”

She really was being a bitch about it...But I should have listened to Her but I didn't, He and I managed to bump into each other again later that night and we exchanged phone numbers,Or should I say He gave Me **HIS** phone ...I read the screen....NO TIME TO TALK DUE TO YOUR BLOCKING FRIEND...KEEP THIS PHONE,MY OTHER NUMBER IS LISTED BENEATH “Ty”

I grinned nodded and found My way back to Ashley who was now sitting among two of our other friends,LaShana and Her twin Shalanda.

Shalanda is the quieter one,And I grew up with these two,If I Am not careful when I speak with them, It is next to impossible to tell them apart! Ashley and I always laughed at the way they would trick people ..Hell two weeks into our freshman year of high school back in the day,Teachers actually caught them cheating by switching roles, in classes,Meaning if one was better than the other in a subject ,The knowledgeable one would attend and take, And almost always passed the test...it was their younger brother,TiJai who alerted their parents as to their antics...Hell..it was best for the parents to have to punish both of them ,Since they too had trouble telling their own daughters apart.

LaShana asked Me”What did that stuck up wannabe boss fool Tyler Harris talking to You about?”

I was taken aback that She knew him,Which meant there was gonna be a dog a brother session among the four of us. Ashley rolled her eyes and said”Erin is not gonna listen to anything You say ,so why waste your breath....?”

And she was more or less right...

“He is a dog.....”

I interrupted Ashley” And you know this because He shut you down when You thought He was trying to holler at you,But when he cracked your face,And came at Me instead,You got your frown upside down?!!”

Ashley just shook her head ,Gave LaShana a look that said”Let the bitch find out for herself..”.Sadly,LaShana did just that....And I Am still finding out for Myself!..But that night I was adamant within Myself,And confident enough to know that I could be and was just as arrogant as he was and rightfully so!,I Am vain and I own that,Just like I would own Tyler as soon as I got the chance...Well actually I got the chance that night....

“Wanna step outside for some air?” I heard a low voice ask...but before I could turn around,Or reply to the voice,I

heard Ashley answer for Me”Dude...get the hell on someplace... Trying to impress your ignorant ass buddies!” I then heard Ty say”Damn...Why are You trying to block....Dayum...I sensed you were a hater!”

“Hater?!”..... I interjected Ashley,” Ash....He is just trying.....!”

But before I could finish Ashley took the conversation back...

“Hater?....Boy please!....You are always here ,And alone drinking, And acting high and mighty...but when you got your no game having friends with You...You want to put My girl on hoodrat radar!....I know ya game negro!”

Now as Ashley is talking,I realize She thinks of Me as a hoodrat....Now don't get Me wrong,I Am straight from Greer....The Jacket City,But I lived in RiverDale Acres, In a brick four bedroom three bath home,While She ,Her two sisters,And the five kids between them and two younger brothers lived in Northgate Manor Apartments with their Mom,and her current boyfriend,Recenter

Widower,Reverend Earl Williams,Who has a nice home in the Needmore Area of Greer,Yet he always laid up in their

Mom's den of iniquity.....Now I could say all this to her face,Right here and now except for one thing.....This 6'4 chick could knock Me on My ass.....So instead....I told Her to chill and that I would be back inside in fifteen minutes....She rolled her eyes in disgust or jealousy,A mixture I believe,But She kept her mouth shut,Both the twins just shook their heads at Me.....These bitches were hella salty!

At first it was awkward when He and I got outside,Until He broke the ice..." So,How long You been friends with ya girl?..."

Now He was fine,But not so fine that He was gonna talk trash about Ashley, Only *I* could do that, And My credit is good,Meaning if I did talk shit about Her, I didn't need anyone co signing to it,Especially not a guy,Who didn't even know Her,So I said, "Long enough to put that sista before a Mista!"

He chuckled as He led Me to a steel blue Honda SUV He opened the passenger door,I gleefully, but subtle ass hopped in....I Am not even gonna lie,the flesh is weak....And Ty

was so fine.... To hell with it....I gave him some....And ten minutes later I was getting dressed and My mobile phone rang, It was Ashley....

“Hey Chick...I’m good....You can head on home and I will see You in the morning,I Am gonna chill with Ty!”

She took a deep breath” Erin,You are about to be the stupid chick in creation! “ I was startled at Her ignorant rant,Yet not as much as the startled look on Ty’s face when He asked”Why You tell Her that?I need to get back to My boys, Call Her back! “

I was thinking this dude is gotta be kidding,”I keep trying,but Her phone is going straight to voicemail!”

He muttered “This shit here.....!”

“Well tell You what take Me Holiday Express, I will get Myself a room tonight really not in the mood for the lecture from Ash tonight!” I said,And he obliged,As I got out to go into the lobby,The door was barely closed,Before He sped off...ten minutes later I got a text saying to text him My room number. ...See....I Got This!..!

“Ty,Are You dating anyone?” I asked during pillow talk.

“No,And not trying to start now!” He chuckled

“You are not very funny...And You picked a fine time to tell Me that!” I snapped.

“I didn't tell You ..You asked”

“You know what I mean!”

“I should not have even gone there with You,Especially if You think sex means an automatic relationship, I mean We can get together from time to time and what not,But not on any exclusive shit....That's All I got to offer!”

I wanted to kill his ass,But I noticed within minutes He had fallen asleep,I followed suit,Hours later,I woke up,And He was gone,On the nightstand was a note,And \$50...And a terse note,Get up with You another time... Get an uber home! “

I was hurt,livid,and embarrassed,I called an uber to take Me to Ashley's,who My parents thought I has slept over to Her

house, Thank God She was asleep, Yet I had already made up a lie that Ty dropped Me off on backside of building, But since She was asleep, it gave Me ample time to sugar coat what was really a debut quickie, In My version , Ty was whipped!.... But sooner or later He would find out that I was a senior in High School, Whereas Ashley and the twins are in their Freshman years in college, He saw Me with them and assumed I was in college also, But funny thing is, He never asked My age, And I was great at playing grown up , So I never volunteered any information.... But I would use the 12 year age difference to My advantage in case He tried to side chick My ass.... Trust it would not be in His best interest.... But for now I Am gonna crawl into the twin bed in Ashley's room, fall asleep and rethink all of last night... I know right now, That I was already in love..... And I knew I could change the alleged arrogant, stuck up no good Ty into the man I know He can be to Me.... As He said, Ashley is a hater.....

Tyler

Laughing and Clownin'

I don't know what it was that made Me sleep withStrike that, calling it what it was,I don't know what it was but something about Erin told Me,I was making a mistake and now that She had called My ass seven times since I left Her ass sleeping in that motel room,I do understand why She was so eager to go there,She told Me Her purse was still in Her girl's car,Because Ashley got it as She was leaving the club,So the clerk at the motel knew Erin due to the fact She was Ashley's cousin....But she is acting like a sprung kid instead of a grown ass woman First of all She did something no self respecting young lady would do,She had sex with Me on the first night,inside My car in a full parking lot,Then decided to get a room,And let Me come through and hit again for a second time ,Leaving Her ass snoring...But the dumb shit was Her actually letting Me hit it raw....But then again,That was stupid on My part....Just glad Shari is in Charleston for two weeks in case My shit started to burn when I piss!

I fucked up by giving Her My burner phone,because She is constantly calling Me with voice and text messages proclaiming to miss Me already.....Bitch Please....Yes,I should have told Her that I Am married,But she never asked,had asked if I was dating,I said No,Which is not a lie.....

I had seen Her at the club many times,I also know Ashley's brother,DeWayne owned the club,Ashley's family had true sense for business,And that made Me not even step to Her,Because She had a superiority complex,And does not like playing second to anyone, And being the dog I Am...I looked past Her to get to Erin's beautiful but gullible ass just to tweak that nose Ashley held so highly in the air.

But I also felt that it will take too much of My time molding her into side chick status,But I tried My best not to let Her know how low of Her I felt....

Erin: Hey...Wyd

Me:Just cleaning around the house,And Yourself?

Erin: Kind of sad

Me:What's up?

Erin:Missing You so much already,But about to get a bit of sleep,Just want You to know that last night was great...hoping for encore..

Me:Get some sleep,As for that encore,Sounds good to Me,Will let You know

Erin:Please Do....hope it will be soon!

Me:OK.

Her:What are Your plans for tonight?

Me:Too soon to say,Probably get some rest and relaxation.much needed!

I then powered My phone off before She suggested hooking up!

Shari

Feel it!

Two weeks away from Ty was gonna be hard, But I Am spending time with My sister, Rosalyn while Her husband, Jalan was away for Army Reserve maneuvers, They were expecting their in two months but ,She would need someone with Her in case that adorable little rugrat wanna pop out early ...And trust...Auntie Shari was gonna be there just in case, Of Course they are boy/girl twins so their names will not sound like a bad nursery rhymes, Their names will be Lisa Marie and DeMari Luis Fowler, a variation that only Ros and Jalan made up from God knows where. But truth be told I just wanna spend time with My sister, And enjoy what will be one of our last get togethers that We can capture the last few minutes of being the age of innocent, Before She stepped into family life, with Her husband and Her newborn, And I will be stepping back into My role of Mrs. Tyler Harris, which I have been for the last five childless years, And to even bring up the subject sends Ty's punk ass running....He tells Me that He is only 28 and I Am just 26

and that We will have more to offer a child, Once We we financially stable....That was two years ago,He is now 30 and I Am 28,But I Am tired of waiting,So judge Me if You want to,But I stopped taking My daily Birth Control pills two months ago,Hell He worked for My Dad's independently owned loan company,Mack Family Bank and Trust,Ty made a damn good salary as Senior Loan Officer,And I,Myself worked for the company as the Accountant,Which is how I got to know Ty,He would often bring His Grandmother into the bank every month,But He always managed to strike up a whole bunch of conversations before finally asking Me out on a date...Long story short,Got Him a job at the bank,To His credit,And My Dad's admiration of Ty's strong work ethics,He managed to become top loan officer... And is a damn good one,...So Why can't We start a family?... Simple because He is too accustomed to being the baby that His parents and Grandma treat Him as....And while on the subject of His family the less I see or hear from that band of Zoo-Zoos!.....His Mother,Jean is forever calling Ty each time She runs into one of His ex girlfriends,And His ass grins just a bit too damn hard at the mention of one of them, But that does not

make or break My world because something She does not realize is the mere fact,had those tricks been all that then I would not be His wife,When I tell You this old chick is a fossil from Hell,Then we have Her lapdog of a husband,Not even worth mentioning,So We skip over to Granny Faye....I will never forget the day She got Her ass on My shit list,When Ty and I first got married,We had a small family dinner at our new house in the SunnyGlenn section of Greer SC! When I tell You I wish I had served Her ass a dose of Arsenic!

“Hey Grams!!” Ty said kissing her on that desktop monitor big ass head of hers,Her hair was holding up a chignon bun on top of her braids,which were so thin they looked like stitches,and she had very short hair,That damn chignon hairpiece was holding on for Dear life!

“Hey Baby...Your mama and daddy will be right in.....they brought your little wife a few things!” Her old fake ass smiled looking like the Grinch that should have stolen Halloween instead of Christmas!

I hugged Her,And Said”Hi Gram!”

She pulled back” Baby Naw! Nobody calls Me that but
“Tykkie”!” Her pet name for Ty
I looked at Her,She said” I Am Mrs.Harris,to You,But if
You bear children then they are to call Me G.G!”

So I asked as my in laws walked in the house with dinner
from KFC....AS IF I DIDN'T HAVE A THREE COURSE
MEAL HOT AND READY!

“Why did You bring food?....I told You I had dinner taken
care of!” I scowled.

Mr.Harris looked at Ty and they made eye contact,Ty
spoke,”Shari....We can eat Your meal later.....Gram is just
funny about eating the food of people She doesn't know!”

I looked at Her,But by now Ty’s Mom,The Other Mrs.Harris
made Her way past Me ,She began fixing plates,Or should I
say,She fixed Ty’s plate,piled high enough to stick the flag

into it....Mr.Harris,G.G ,and Myself were left to fix our own plates....

As we sat in awkward company I broke the Ice...

“So Mrs.Harris....Excuse Me Ole Mrs.Harris....What does G.G stand for?!” I asked to be petty.

“It stands for Great Grandma!....When Am I gonna be a great grandma while we on the subject?” She croaked.

“I guess as soon as You do something Great....Until then “Tykkie” is all You got!”

She stood up and announced or should I say commanded that they leave....Not just the in laws She ordered Ty to come too!....I was not any good when He got up,

And glared at Me”I will be back....You started this shit
.....Be back after I get Gram calm!”

Ole Lady Harris yelled”AND WE BROUGHT OVER OUR
OWN FOOD BECAUSE YALL PEOPLE FROM
CHARLESTON WORK ROOTS,AND TOMORROW
TYKKIE GOING TO SISTA PICCOLO TO SEE WHAT
ROOTS YOU GOT ON HIM!”

MY husband said Nothing to defend Me,So I asked God to
forgive Me because I was getting ready to sin!

Then I slammed the damn door.....Already pissed,I got even
more heated when I remembered I had spent \$50 dollars on
a meal that I was gonna try to pass off as if it were my own
delicacy!.....I checked the time ,It was 4:30 pm...I gathered
the food I had,And the remainder of the KFC and drove it to
the homeless shelter.....If Ty kept being a punk he would
soon be taking up residence here,Or with the Zoo-Zoos !

Erin

Made For Me!

I woke up and realized I had slept the majority of the day, So Ashley let Me sleep in while She went to Her bi weekly Saturday work seminar, And I was glad to have time to make up a plausible excuse for missing Three calls from Daddy, Five from Mama, And a threatening one from My older brother, Telling Me to call our parents or He was gonna kick My ass... Well I certainly was not worried about that.... He lived in Travelers Rest SC with His wife, Shalanda and their three kids, Which meant He has children of His own.... And I was not one of them!, Add that to the fact My sister in law loved Herself some Erin, Always treated Me like the big sister I never had but wanted, Sure Ashley was My Bestie, But She was as clueless as I was when it came to a lot of things ..men being one of them! See, My father was a widower when He met My Mother, So My older brother, Charles was eight years old when our parents met each other, And He was two weeks away from His tenth birthday When Our father married My Mother, And a year

later I was born. I was fifteen years old When I found out My brother and I didn't have the same mother... It shocked Me because our father's parents died years before I was born, I assumed that David and Linda Pearson was My paternal grandparents, Because since I was a toddler, They never did anything for Charles without doing something for Me, Same for the Aunts, Uncles, And Cousins, I went on summer break with the family each year, I was treated no different from their biological grandkids, Charles' mom , Teresa was lucky to have such a loving family, By the time I found out the truth.... I was like "Wow!..... This is devastating!"... Man I felt that way for all of two seconds.... Because it makes no different, Grandpa Charles, Grandma Linda, And everyone else in the family, is My family too... My Mom got the same treatment, I once overheard My Grandma say to a neighbor, "Gayle reminds Me of Teresa, And that Lil Erin is Grandma's heartstrings!" I was closer to them than I was to My Mom's family, Sadly so was My Mom, She never really talked about Her family very much, except for the occasional visits to Charlotte NC, However each Christmas, Birthday ,or Any other special occasions We would gather, exchange pleasantries and gifts, And I did have three cousins from that

side of the family with whom I was close to,Rory,Shannon,And LeDawn,who were sisters,Rory is two years older than I Am and four years older than LeDawn and Shannon... Just thinking about sharing My excitement over My new boyfriend, Ty....And to tell My Sister in law Shalanda,that She was absolutely right advising Me not to write off older men,Because they want to spoil You,And treat You like they would treat the Queen that they know You are!

And along came Ty,He was Made for Me....in fact from the conversation between Ashley and the twins had last night, Rory should know Ty,Because She had dated Randy Peake,one of the guys with Ty's clique last night....I looked at My phone to power it on....It would take ten minutes or less for it to display any missed messages....Twenty minutes passed ,only notifications of social media sites I surf popped up....No text from Ty....I sent myself a message to see if My last saved and unread message indicator would light up....Nothing...Since He had given Me the phone,It gave Me the free reign to reach out to Him whenever I felt like it....And it had been three hours since I had heard from Him...Let Me teach out and touch My man

Me: Hey Baby...Miss You already.

Ty: Hey Erica! How have you been since Four hours ago?.

I laughed, But I just thought He was acting aloof...Not even remembering My damn name...YeaHe was gonna have to rectify that,.

Me: I Am missing You, BTW My name is Erin...not Erica...You may wanna try to get that right for future references!

Ty: SorryErin....

Me: Do You miss Me?

Ty: I couldn't even get your name right yet..So how can I miss You,We only met last night.

Me: That is not all We did last night... Twice as I recall... What was that?

Ty: I know what We did.... And enjoyable it was.... But I just have a lot going on right now....

Me: Such as ? You swore to Me that You were not dating anyone before We got together...

Ty: I wasn't dating anyone then, And I Am not dating anyone now... Erin, Really this is childish, We are not teenagers, I Am way past High School crush phase, And You should be too... I can say one positive thing that separates Ashley and You .. Ashley acts Her age, You Straight out of Saved By The Bell!

Me: Ashley has been hating on the fact You and I hooked up, She warned Me that You were only after one thing!

Ty: And I got it...

Me:Wow You are not the man I thought You were...

Ty: I Am exactly the man You think I Am,And You are acting like the silly type of chicks I dated back in the day...I thought for a minute today that You would be cool to kick it with from time to time,But this sprung shit ...Is thirsty and I have a fridge full of soda,So I will drink that shit,And let You do You...

Me : Ty....I Am sorry. . it is just the fact Ashley and My other girls say You are no good and thatYou may be on the DL because of the way You treat women...And that I was stupid to even waste My time trying to flip You!

OK....Ashley never said any of the DL stuff about Him,But I knew that would sully his pride...And Before He let that DL suspect rumor follow Him,He was gonna prove his point by showing Me that DL is the last name of a comedian and not His sexual preference,I just had to instill the blow to his ego....To get Him where I wanted Him to be,And that was with Me!

Ty: You know better than to believe that. Proof positive I put that work when it comes to getting busy.....So to hell with Ashley ,Naomi and Judd Nelson!

Me: So You remember last night?...

Ty:Yes,And I can't go there with You.

Me: Well You gotta come get this phone...

Ty:No need, keep it until the 13th which is when bill is due,When it does go past due it will be disconnected.

Me: Oh so last night meant nothing?

Ty:Yea it meant something, It means I should have just walked on by!...

Me: FunnyOr Maybe... You should have done a lot of thingssuch as You should have used a condom,Because Although I Am free from STDs,I Am not on the pill as I told You I was.....Maybe when I turn 18 in

a few months,....But My Parents are not ready to let anyone deflower their baby girl....So think twice about trying to throw Me away like used Kleenex.....And what do You have to say about that?!

Ty:I say I could care less but,My wife would maybe kick a bone our your young ass! Yea little girl I kept it Straight ,100 with Ya young ass ,I Don't date because I have been married for the past five years... And counting....So do You. I Am out!

I did My best to text back my whole damn rant but when I hit send....it failed three times....Just that fast Ty had had the phone disconnected,And when I tried to call from My own phone,But being that He figured it was Me calling,He sent it to voicemail,Five minutes later,I called again,But he had blocked that number also....And to add to My woes....Ashley came bopping into Her apartment.....No way would I let Her get an I told You so at My expense!...But Damn....She did tell Me....Ty was made for Me....And by lie or cry,I was gonna forge a way into his life.....And Although I was only bullshitting about having

My parents lock his ass up,I was dead on serious about the birth control....But even I would be shocked by the change that was to come,For Ty!

Tyler

I'm Gonna Forget About You!

I was pissed!!!!.....Did this dumb girl just say She was 17 years old?..Hell Naw! I wanna choke this silly ass chick?! And now to know She was not on the pill!.....I had to admit I was stupid for hitting it raw twice in one night!,But nowI could go two places, Jail for statutory rape then on to divorce court....And last stop In addition to those,Unemployment line... Shari's family would fire My ass so fast...it would not be funny!

So now I had to contact Erin,This Lunicaticky chick has Me so mad right noe!,But She was gonna accompany Me to the clinic to get checked and then Her ass was gonna be a lesson well learned....But I needed peace and quiet at the moment to try to talk Myself into NOT going to Her home and wring Her chicken ass neck! Yeah...I needed to chill !
I can't believe I got Myself into this shit...Not to mention I had 0% feelings towards this girl!

The only reason I even went there was on a dare from My wife's brother,"My sis is the only chick your corny ass could pull!"

He was My brother in law,But He was also My Road Dawg!...Plus...His ass does dirt too,So We clean up behind each other,Still I Am married to His sister,And still I knew He had My secrets ,Safe and Secure....And I got His back too....We both kind of knew Ashley and the twins,But Erin was a new and fresh face to My brother in law,Pierre,And our boys,Derrick and Chris,And We all admired Her beauty,But what attracted Me to Her was the \$400 bet from My boys that She wouldn't give My ass the time of day because I was the pompous, arrogant,And determined Young man of our crew,I was more serious about My job and it's stature!

Another thing was Erin was dumb as Hell.....Within five minutes of being within earshot of hearing Her girls warn Her against Me due to the fact I had never as much as spoke to either of them ,giving them the opinion that I was stuck on Myself....Damn Right.....And Erin,Who now I can understand why she acted so childish . .She *is* a child,And I

Am willing to bet She is Ashley's dorm mate,Because Her
slick Ass mouth probably got Her kicked out by Her
parents....I bet Her Daddy is a Pastor,Because My Uncle
Johnny is a Pastor,And his daughter,My cousin Tia is wild
ass Hell...And from what I hear through the grapevine,Her
Mom,My Aunt Cheryl is even worse,Especially when My
Uncle attends one of town watching over
Her pregnant Sister Rosalyn,Who does not like Me ,But that
shit does not stop Me from eatingBecause I *never* liked
Rosalyn or
Her husband,So checkmate on that! Of course I could have
gone with Shari ,But I needed this time to Myself,Shari is
My wife,Her Dad is My boss....Do the smart thing and stay
employed..I have moved up financially,And was gonna keep
going full speed ahead, Shari is gorgeous, Whereas Erin was
pretty.So I guess guilty as charged when it comes to being a
hypocrite but I often find Myself wondering if Shari was
doing more than taking care of Rosalyn,Shari dated two
guys back in the day,Brad Simpson and Donnel Scott,And
they always seem to ignore the fact Shari is married,And
She always smiled that same smile that She gave to Me
when I first met Her,Then that deep crimson blushing that

has held My ass ,And forever keeps heads turning.....I would be rich as hell if She did get caught creeping,Her parents are so socially obsessed and easily embarrassed,So if She got caught having an extra marital affair ,Shari, Her parents would make it worth My while,But if I should get caught.....I Am finished! And anyone who knows Me,Understand the fact I Am not loyal to anybody....Except My Parents and Gram! But I had only one thing on My mind,And that was to play it smooth...My stupid ass let it slip about being married, And I know that even if I didn't tell Her My wife's name ,Because I knew as soon as She had a chance to go on one of those online genealogy sites ,She would find out Her name is Shari,And that Her family is prominent and well off ...And I knew just like the ratchet child, She would be on some blackmail shit....Fuck It! Let Her.....I Am like Drew PetersonUntouchable!

Erin

Lost and Looking

It had been nine weeks since I got played by Ty, But today
out of the blue He text Me

Ty: What's Up?

Me: Your days of ignoring Me

Ty: Explain

Me: You need to tell Shari that she is gonna be a stepmom

Ty: Bitch Say What?!!!!

Me: You need to come see Me,Or Shari will be seeing Me.

.....

Ty: OK! What the fuck ever ,And be ready to piss on the

Me: Bet! Ashley will bear witness! Then You have ten days to tell Shari or I will...After I torture you mind,soul,and body!

Ty: Tomorrow lying trick! After I Am clear of your lying ass busting of open for any man above your level,!

Me:Tomorrow male bitch,!

Erin

Ty must think I Am stupidI Am not a whore,And the only man I have been with recently was His ass ...So I can't wait until after school tomorrow. !!.....I plan to let Him know exactly what two pink stripes on an EPT test and then I will give Him the ample timeHe asked Me to meet Him a Bayside inn and He needed me to hear his side of the story....Oh I Am gonna listen,Just gonna ignore what he is really saying! I used My “Petty”LaBelle tactics,I was gonna find His wife,Shari,with this being the social media era,Shaidrian(Shari)Harris was easy to find on Facebook,Twitter,But what caught My eye was the fact Her family owned six car lots,And Ty was the manager of two of the local ones,And Shari was head of human resource,Hmmm too bad.I was allergic to working or My ass would be at his place of employment.But this was better....A bit of snooping I found out she was soon to celebrate a birthday,,,,well wishes from everyone....except Ty’s family,When I tell You I read twitter messages of his sisters calling Her Ty’s Financial net and nothing more.I

read as much as I could before concocting a plan....And if Ty wanted to be Daddy Warbucks,Seeing as to His five years of of marriage and no children,Whereas Shari often posted on random pregnant friends page that She herself wanted a baby,But Ty was dragging his feet on the issue....Her friends told her it will happen for them soon,But Ty's sister,Giselle commented maybe it is best that they wait to see if the marriage improves first.And by that She meant Shari always feels the need to let blame fall on Ty.But I have to give it to Her,Not once did she even reply to anything they said...but one post said it all....One of Shari's friends Tashay replied;

Shari married Ty not his family....it has been five years;And she still does not deal with your stupid asses;Ty ain't shit!thought He was marrying Shari to be his bank.....that nigga works for her family,lives in a house Shari's family gave them the down payment for.....get it right you dumb ass bitches,Hell yall think he gives a damn about his sisters who has to wait until the third of each month to get their child support check from each of their married 'break'baby daddies?!

Jackpot! I just got a notification;Shari accepted My friend request
Shari

Ain't That Good News

My sister Roz gave birth to a baby boy..A whopping 11lb 6 oz baby boy who she named after her fave car....Camaro Ralan Smith! My brother in law Jalan made it home and to the hospital just in the nick of time! I stepped out into the cafeteria to get a bite to eat,And decided to call Ty,Who was at work by now

Me;Hey! Roz and Jalan have a beautiful baby boy!

He chuckled;***Well Shari baby that is usually the outcome when You are pregnant!***

Me;Ty why are you always so negative about my nephew being born,he is the first grandchild;And our first nephew!

Ty;He is YOUR first nephew....He is my 7th.....Thanks to My sister with her eenie meenie mini moe who my baby daddy ass!

Me;Ty you are wrong for that!

Ty;Just keeping it real....And lets not forget My sixteen year old niece,just had fraternal twins;one by a white dude,the other by a puerto rican, Or should we say He is NIGARICAN!'

I didn't want to laugh but that was some funny shit especially since those dumb asses always had a problem with Me,And I know the source is Sea Hag Granny Harris!

Me;I guess I will be home Thursday,Forgot You have an out of town business trip for the dealership This weekend.

Ty;but I will be back on Sunday,Miss You,but do Me a favor?Don't come home with talks of babies.....It is not happening any time soon.....In fact I want to have a vasectomy,Being married to You is wonderful,And I think

of all We can do without being tied down...Plus the way marriages end and there is an innocent child caught in the middle!

Me;Sure Ty whatever You say....I Am pretty sure that little Camaro will be happy to be an heir to all the dealerships;We don't need to have a baby just to get a \$250.000.00 check like Camaro did.I Am totally happy...And You are right;Daddy would fire you if we had a child and broke up,Especially since He always tells Me to show one sign of mistreatment from You;And he will fire you fast....Funny its almost like He wants to fire You anyway,,,,,,,,,

Then I hung up on his ass!....I sat eating a chef salad when I got a friend request from a young girl named Erin ,And as she and I corresponded,She revealed that she is Ty's cousin....one of the bottom rung she said....Trust and believe I knew exactly how she felt...Ty had never mentioned Her so I know for a fact what she is going through...Ty had one of the most stuck up but don't have shit

to show for it....I mean his Dad is always a sweetheart to it is Me it is the women in Ty's family who are a fucked up reality show,And his Granny retarded ass is the star of the show! I told Erin that we should hook up when I got back in town,She asked if all was ok...I gushed about My newborn nephew!....She was excited as I was...I also promised not to mention the bad shit she had told Me of Ty's Zoo Zoo family...We ended our conversation,Promising to hook up for lunch when I got back to Greer!Ty is a piece of damn work,But If he kept talking vasectomy shit...Let him because the final tee hee was on his ass....Yea....classy chicks prick holes in condoms too.....Ah And Yep...I do believe I will be having My own baby in about seven months....Pre-Vasectomy joke on his ass!

Ty

Find yourself another fool

I hope like hell this bitch pisses on this damn test and get a negative....I bought six different EPT test all claiming to be accurate....But Erin also had a trick up her sleeve,I foolishly thought She lived with wicked bitch Ashley So I drive through Sunnyside,I knew She stayed on campus of the Greer division of Greenville Tech At least that is what I thought

“What the hell you doing here?....You know that Erin does not live here!” Ashley stated.

“Well which dorm?”

This bitch laughed.....She lives in her own home;in Sunnydale,312 drive!

Then slammed the door in My forget the bull....My wife nagging ass will be home tomorrow,And I have to transport a few cars out of town this weekend,And I needed to find

out if this ho was pregnant on the real! I drove a bit farther. Wondering if this was one of these young girls with money trying to make more money.....

I pull up to the home, As I walk to the door. it opens before I even knocked... A young lady opened the door and said "You must be Ty!, Erin talks about You all the time,,,!

I smiled as she extended her hand... thinking where is Erin? Her ass knew I was coming..... while I was thinking... The young lady named TeAndrea said 'Here comes Erin now'''' I turned in time to see this bitch getting off a Greer High School Bus!!!!

She got off and came running up to Me! I straight played Her ass like a fiddle,,,,,, I tossed Her the bag..... I said 'Here! Take your ass in the house and piss now! But before I could do so her Daddy came to the door!

'Ty?.... What are You doing coming to see My daughter?.... Aren't You married to My client's daughter?!

I said'Well she asked Me to come by and bring her these EPT test for Her because two niggas are suspect in her pregnancy! 'I said smugly

Erin did not know that Her father knew Me,And for the moment kept quiet,Her Dad was only thinking about what I just said"Erin! What the fuck is your problem? "' then unexpectantly he punched Erin in her face so Hard blood flew from Her nose,She didn't cry,That let Me know that Pops was a strict asss man...Never saw that side of him,Always liked the guy,But I was gonna have to tell My father in law that He beat his daughter in front of Me because I did her a favor by picking up the EPT test for Her because She and My sister were friends and that I would get the money from Erin via My sister,He bought that scenerio and fell to the ground,Saying that He had so much hope for Erin,Then he calmed down and asked if I would join Him for a drink because I was only trying to help,And that Erin threw away everything,He had been saving money to send her through college since the day she was born....And two know she is possibly pregnant by one of two dudes She was smashing,Erin just sat quietly as i joined her Dad talking

about she made a mistake probably because She was spoiled,fast...And Loose like Her Grammy before Her twelve kids and only his wife and her Twin are the only ones with the same Dad. All Erin could do for either of us each test had double pink lines.....Erin smirked,Dad And Mom yelled,As for Me I got the hell out of dodge before Erin ratted me But something about her smirk had Me shaken not stirred!

Erin

Shake.Rattle and Rattle and Roll

Ok so Ty has my family not only thinking I have possibly two baby daddies ,this simple simon ass nigg a three more dudes saying they gang fucked Me one night and that the baby was a community baby....I have never been so hurt in My entire life....I was also ready to kick Ashley's hating ass for telling Ty where I lived...I always felt she was a hater.But yet and still She is My girl....MeaningI Am still cussing that ass out.....

Ashley's Thump Thump ass aswered on the first ring,And got cussed out immediately following Her ,Hello.

‘Ashley! You are messy ass all hell sending Ty ass to My house....Oh it gets better,the other day I ley My age slip out;So When You sent Him To My house,He was at the door talking to My Mom...when the School Bus let Me off!!’ I spat

She was snickering until I dropped the news about the fool bringing all these EPT brands over here, And That My dad was an acquaintance of My dad ,And asked Him, 'Hey Ty...where is Shari?'

That got her attention, 'So He lied about not dating anyone else?'

I scoffed....'No,,,,,Shari is his wife!'

Ashley got all holier than thou? "You are a foul bitch....a young foul ,young and dumb!.....That asshole is married.....but You are pregnant for Him?'

I felt some type of way with the way the way she was playing Me ignorant...But My head was not into arguing...I was too embarrassed to tell Her I slept

With him the first night we met....Well actually twice that same night.

She said;What if his wife finds out? She will kick a bone out your ass!'

I just knew Ashley was being salty because She never tied herself down to just one man....But as for Me....Ty was the

object of desire....I think it was because someone else had him,,,,,But I knew exactly how to play my hand,And I was gonna deal an ace in the hole.....Or should I say “An Ass in a hole!”

Shari

Mean Old World

I was back from visiting My sister, And As soon as I got home. I could tell Ty had had a bad day...at least He looked that way..

“Hey Shari.....Glad You finally made it home, Was gonna surprise You....But...,” He laughed and I sniffed the remnants of a created fried Chicken..’So maybe We can run out and get something!’

I smiled, Agreeing because I was hungry...and on the qt so was the little muffin soon to be bun in My oven, But until I Am sure where this marriage is gonna lead

I Am not giving him any indication at all until I know all will be safe and healthy,

Ty asked if I felt like driving? I said I would then I asked''Are You feeling ok?

He frowned' and motioned for Me to follow Him.His car had big white splotches on it,where burgundy paint should have been!

“What happenend’ I asked bracing myself for what I knew would the the umpteenth lie in our five years of marriage, Oh and He didn’t disappoint.

‘I was serving a repo paper in Mudlake and ol’girl sent her four snotty nosed kids firing rotten eggs and shit all over My damn car....ten the teen thot who I Am guessing let her dope boy drive the car to stunt while she hops off a damn school bus,saw Me standing next to Trey,who was asking where the car was...started cussing Me out....Flinging her purse and shit..exposing six different brands of EPT boxes...then ...I just broke camp...Trey managed to trace the car though!

Now Ty has told some damn good lies before, but if this was a lie.....Sidney Poitier should relinquish his oscar, Or someone should be scuba diving trying to salvage the one Hattie McDaniel's has been rumored to be resting at the bottom of the sea.....I laughed until He became perturbed''Oh You think I Am lying?'

'Naw because you can lie ya ass off...but this sound like some shit straight outta Mudlake....murky...but believable!'

'Welcome Home Shari.....now let's hit The Beacon!'

'Wow, You must really be shook.....driving all the way to Spartanburg will not be happening, Not with Me behind the wheel....hell We going to Burger King ,And gonna have it My way!' He just shook his head and gave that full of shit laugh he always gives when He knows his cash cow is about to have Her Brama Bull ass kick him to the curb across from the unemployment line! Like I knew before We got married, He truly loves Me, But He is and always have been sneaky and whorish...However Ty had issues, And I don't mean the Greer Citizen either!.....See if you know what

nouvea riche' means, People who have new money and don't know how to act?,,,Well Ty was Nouveau Fine.....meaning He was fine as hell now...But unlike alot of guys I knew Ty,Has not always been fine.....But I changed that..You cannot Be My Husband and I Am all Lauren London-esque and He was looking like J.J.Evans best friend,Neckbone.....Nah.....Once I decided I wanted Him,,,,,,,To get himself together ,I made him my own project,slipped and fell in love.And Still very much Am,,,,,,But five years older than that September Saturday in 2012 when We echanged our vows.....However later that day,Ty bgan complaining of chest pains,And was kept overnight at the hospital...So We had to wait to consummate the marriage,,,three days...long enough for the penicillin to cure the clap He maybe caught at His bachelor party,Ty's best man,was His cousin Daschle,And Daschle's bitch ass wife is Ty's cousin ,Zelle told people about six dudes at the bachelor party had gotten the clap from the 'Ho Court Advanced Do anythang strange for Change Escort 'girls were hired...i just ignored it the way I ignore alot of things Ty's family have to say....except for his Da,they could all take the slow fall to hell!

We pulled up in the Burger King Parking lot. And Ty asked if We were getting our food to go....I said yeah,,,Thinking He wanted Me to hurry and get home with a bit of freaky shit...But as we stood at the register,I recognize one of My little play cousins,Shalanda....She and her identical with LaShanda were forever begging to follow Roz and Me around....I looked at Her and said'I KNOW THIS IS NOT LIL SHALANDA!''

She rolled Her eyes and sais'YOU ARE RIGHT....ITS NOT SHALANDA....IM LASHANDA!.....YOU AND ROZ COULD NEVER TELL US APART1' We hugged each other....time flies,,,,I realized that I had not introduced Her to My husband Ty,But thanks to Ty arrogance she seemed to recognize and was not pleased to see him.....He gave his order and excused himself to the men's room while I chatted and caught up with Shanda and exchanged numbers,As we were doing so I got a text from Erin,asking to please reach her tomorrow if possible....Her parents She explained were trippin'..I text that I will catch her tomorrow after Ty leaves for the airport.maybe she and I can meet up...Hell to hear Her tell it Ty had a long line of assholes in his

family.....And on that I could certatinly relate.....I decided to keep it to Myself because Ty and his family were already a bitch to Me,But this young girl was only 17 and she was a blood relative.....I can only imagine how they dog My ass out when I Am not around.....As if I cared! But someting told Me to bond with Erin,Hell if anyone knows what that band of Zoo Zoos can be like it is Me,She told Me that She had not seen Ty in a while,after He grew more uppity He and she rarely spoke,,Which is why she had requested Me as a friend,Because She had only recently learned that Ty has been married five years via Granny Zoo Zoo referring to Ty being married to Me for George and Louise status...Movin'On Up.....So I was like this girl needed to be able to help Me wreak havoc and let everyone know that Ty's status came from My family and not his.....This fool knows He has a A million dollar baby from a Five and Ten Cent store.....Our Marriage License has a PAID IN FULL clause attached to it.....And My name was All over the bill of sale....Ty!

Erin

Out in the cold again

I should have known a day at the mall would end up being a ruse for besties hangout day, But would wind up being another intervention,, Everytime I date a new guy they feel the need to sit My young ass down and tell Me where each previous relationship went wrong... See Ashley, Shanda and Landa always take it upon themselves to let Me know that I should remember the last relationship I had, And they all covered for Me, Until the guy went off on Me and beat My ass into a two week hospital stay... At the Greenville County Jail infirmary, I was dating a guy named Timothy Murphy a year ago, And when We first met, It was all about Me, He was twenty one, I was barely fifteen,,,, But this was My future husband.... I just knew it, However My girls said He was playing Me, And They also knew that My idea of dating was simply because He had given Me few rides to school, Nothing sexual ever happened between us, But I fell for Him,,,, But one day... something went terribly wrong, I had never met anyone from His side of the family. But mine bought the story I sold them , that Timothy and I were a

couple...And although He never spent time at My house,My family knew Him,Ashley,Shanda,and Landa ,Thought He was either Just fucking with Me,And He was...He was fucking with My head.....He called Me one Morning

“E,I can’t take you to school in the morning....But could I come by there tonight and get My weekly gas money...And I promise to explain,But really need you to keep your word \$10 a week!’

“You asking Me for gas money but You can’t drive to school tomorrow?!”

‘Hush,it is important!’”

I spat’Naw...I Am in bed...You come by tomorrow and take Me to ATM machine and drop me off at school!...My Dad would shoot you coming here this time of night..That loud ass car!’

‘Cool...I will park down the street,meet Me at Your backdoor!’

“HURRY UP!’I screamed ,glad My parents were sound asleep and didn’t hear My rant...or wake up catching Me sneaking ten dollars from Her purse,I Am a spoiled brat,so getting caught doing that was way easier than hurriedly dressing in an all black hoodie ensemble,and black Nike sneakers and snuck out the backdoor...I was gonna catch Timothy trying to play Me for a fool,I walked around the corner instead of waiting at My house I snuck out to catch Him with some chick,,,,And as soon as he pulled up,I saw a light skinned chick sitting in the passenger side of the car!

I ran up on the still idling car,yanked the door open,this bitch had been crying....So I was gonna give her one more reason to shed tears!,I yanked her ass out of the car,,,puffy red and swollen eyes,And she was older,So I guess Timothy had finally gotten the message He was mine,And when He told this 30 something looking chick it was over....But As I beat her ass.....A crowd came around...then there were two other bitches jumping ME only to be witnessed by My three besties,And My parents,it actually took a few minutes before I realized Timothy was pistol

whipping My ass, Yelling”BITCH DON’T YOU EVER PUT
YA FUCKING HANDS ON MY MAMA!.....MY
GRANDMA JUST DIED AND YOU WANT TO BE HER
TRAVELING COMPANION?”

One the girls, Tried to pull Timothy off Me, only to start
kicking My ass Herself!

I ended up in traction, And in lock up.....I Am still doing
community service on that shit...Bottom line I never slept
with Timothy, And it still had Me so open that I beat his
Mom’s grieving ass.....And I *have* slept with and was
pregnant for Ty so You know I would have no problem
getting My Carla Hughes on!

BACK TO PREVIOUS GIRL TALK

‘Erin,,,,,,guess who was slumming at BK last night?”

I had a feeling She was gonna say Timothy or one of his
Hefty Hoes sisters, But She said ,’Tyrone.....And his
wife.....! Fool was shitting bricks that I was gonna out
Him to Shari!”

Shalanda and LaShanda gave her a dirty look.....of course it was Ashley being messy!

I rolled My eyes....'Since when did You become on a first name basis with 'Shari'' as you o comfortfly seem familiar with?

“'Since she was like a big sister type to the twins!’”

I knew these two bitches were messy times two but damn!

“'So what if He takes Her to BKThis chick.....this chick who answers to “ERIN’ goes to Upscale restaurants when He takes Me out.....on Shari’s fucking credit card!’”

Shalanda spoke'Damn Erin.....Timothy’s beatdown on You must have been intense because You are cold,heartless,and bitter!’

“He is only playing your ass bitch....And I wanna be front row and center when He does You like dirt.....Oh excuses Me,I stand corrected He begins treating You dirtier! Ashley

added.....And just wait until You present Him with
your little package...Told You not to mess with His ass.....!
Your parents are gonna put your ass out.....just watch!.....

‘Bitch....DON’T WORRY ABOUT WHAT MY PARENTS
GONNA DO!’”””””.....BESIDES.....’ ‘I then shut
up.....pretending to cry,making them form a group
hug.....My PARENTS WOULD NEVER DO THAT! So did
they.....But Ty didn’t know that.....And Ashley hating
ass gave Me a great idea.....One that would require My
ass to cry on cue and produce more water works than
SJWD!

Ty

Somebody ease My Troublin” mind!

See this is the bullshit I Am speaking of when it comes to Shari,,,She comes from money...But the minute She runs into a few of he friends...This bitch can get her Hoodrat On!

I was shitting bricks hoping this rat ass twin...Don’t know which one but I just knew shit just got real...Especially after finding out She was a life long friend....Fuck! Now I gotta meet up with this dumb ass My Super Sweet 16 reject and act all sweet to her to see how much Her ass has blabbed....Yet to get out of the house,meaning I had to start an argument with Shari to get out of the house,So I blamed her stating he Burger King food gave Me a virus....

“Take ya ass on then get whatever it is....But that virus better not be linked to HIV You dumb ass bastard!’she bitched!

“Be Right Back!’

“Take your Time!’ she gritted

‘Was gonna do that anyway....Eat ya damn Burger King..and have it Your Way...gonna run to Ruby Tuesday for take out!!”

‘Don’t Forget these condoms.....Brought them home just for You!’

She smirked....opening the pack and handing Me one of them.....I looked at her.....shook My head ...took the remainder of the pack and watched Her face scrunch up it.....and start that crying shit.....I left...feeling a big ass thud hit the wall missing my head by a just over an inch.....by a bronze statue that sits on the mantelpiece!.....I would never strike A woman.....physically but in My mindMY FOOT WAS KNEE DEEP INTO HER ASS!.....But now I gotta keep My fingers and toes crossed hoping Erin will come to her stupid ass senses and Hoover that bun in the oven situation! I gotta focus...I have to leave town for a few days and need My head to be clear.....As long as I have been married to Shari.....no one has ever tried to even put demands on Me the way this Sesame Street imaginary relationship chick Erin!

Shari

I Don't Want To Cry

Ty has really got it twisted thinking just because He needed an excuse to get out of the house probably to go and see whatever bitch fucked up His car...And yeah...I believe it was due to dumb shit He caused...And true...I could play his game ...But fuck that...My body is a temple...and letting any and every dude that compliments Me,NO! ...I was not that type ,I have more self respect than any other young woman i

know,I Am not saying I was a virgin when I met Ty...because I wasn't but until Ty became engaged...But I never disrespected our marriage vows ,And trust have had many and plenty opportunities to do so....But I Am not gonna cheat on Him just for the simple fact.....I got My reasons....a whole trust fund and ans stomach full to assure his ass that one major mess up from him ,He will be looking for a new love,life,and pure hell.....And when it comes to y Daddy.....Ty is in fact the Devil's Son In Law,And if He does not want that Rudy Ray Moore ending then I suggest that he stays on his best behavior,Because unlike ol Satan's daughter.....It was a privilege to even have Me wearing His wedding band,Before He was hired into My father's dealership,And believe Me,My family embraced Ty,Unlike His family and Me,But The more Erin and I email..and text...I feel as if She was being dogged because from her pics....She was way prettier than anyone I have met of the family I had married into and since Ty and My dad,and Brother are gonna be out of town six days,and I Am gonna enjoy myself,hang with a few of My girls who are always complaining about Me being a homebody,In fact I was gonna invite Erin out to lunch maybe tomorrow ,But I guess

She must be out or asleep since Her phone went straight to voicemail, So I shot her a text message

ME;HEY CUZZO..WAS TRYING TO SEE IF YOU WERE FREEE FOR LUNCH TOMORROW...LET ME KNOW,,,,MY TREAT.....HIT ME UP AND LET ME KNOW,,,,HUBBY IS GONNA BE OUT OF TOWN SO I AM GONNA PARTY LIKE IT'S SPRING BREAK!

Although her phone had gone to voice message, She text Me back saying that she would love to, But would let Me know tomorrow morning,,,, She said something to the effect of Her parents going through a major rough patch..... I text her letting Her know that I Am here for her.....

Then not giving a damn whether or not Ty got home before I went to sleep or not... I decided to let Calgon take Me Away, for an hour, I got myself situated I chilled with Netflix, And was ROTFLMAO at Snow On The Bluff.... a documentary made by dealer/thief Curtis Snow!..... That guy is the genuine article.... Two hours later, Ty rolled his ass in at 12;30..... He looked as if He had just seen

Michael,Prince,And Whitney getting kicked out of rock and roll Heaven.....I just hope the bitch was worth it because....I am just waiting to break out My Energizer batteries ,And the Hindeburg of a vibrator.....Hell with the right mood set,I will thinking,,,,;Ty who?' gonna break that face though,,,,within ten ,,nine ,eight,seven.....;;;'Shari what the fuck????????!!!

Holding up the EPT positive result stick in his tissue wrapped hand.....It was almost as if He thought,It was from another bitch.....Oh Go ahead nigga.....just give Me the reason.....

I just rolled My eyes at Him,Before jumping up,barely making it to the toiletAnd to hear Ty groan""AWWW HELL.....I AM A FUCKING DONE DEAL!'

I just brushed my teeth,gargled,And said'Cheer up.....You Could be an if fortune.....

I swear the smug sonofabitch tried to hide a \$mirk!
But as soon as I have My baby,I Am divorcing his ass.....And all will collect is his severence package.....

Erin

What a Wonderful World This Would Be

Ty has Me all upset, This piece of shit came to see Me at Ashley's only to break My face, However He waited until after having sex with Me.... While He was all up in Me, He was all..” I Am so sorry to have hurt You..... it was that bitch Shari.... I wanna leave!”

Hearing this got Me all happy and I put it on Him so damn good, He fell asleep, And although, I still had every intention of telling the My parents put Me out lie... I just let Him sleep.... Did He not say He wanted to leave?..... Well in My mind, He already had.... But when his ass woke up at 3:45 a.m He panicked” Erica!.... Why you let Me sleep that long!..... Shari gonna be pissed!”

I looked at Him” You said You wanna leave. So who gives two damns about Her being pissed?.... Besides.... I Am pregnant!.... And because of Your Bullshit.... I Am Ass out with My parents!.....”

He kept putting on His clothes,” What You want Me to do?!... Ashley ya girl....stay with Her.....!

I was livid” Stay with Ashley?!!!....You gotta be kidding! “
He backed out of the room shrugging His shoulders and saying”That’s all I got....!.....Stay with Ashley....I have a wife

“And?!....What about the baby?.....’

‘Your body,Your baby....do whatcha feel!’”

‘Are You serious right now?’”

‘As the only rea heart attack Redd Foxx ever had!’

This guy truly was coming off as the asshole I had been warned that He was,pus He had more clap backs than Tamar Braxton and K.Michelle!

‘So I Am gonna be a baby mama to a deadbeat dad?’

‘Naw You gonna the a single mama,Maybe You could move into a home for unwed mothers,Read a book once called

‘The Girls Of Huntington House.....MAYBE.....Your fine ass could turn it into a reality show!’ he howled.....

‘You are a Bitch Ass Nigga!’

He rolled his neck,And put up his hand...and spoke ike A woman ‘‘Damn Right Girlfriend!’ walking out of Ashley’s apartment!

It was then that I remembered to reply to Shari’s text

Me;Hey ...Would love to do lunch!

Shari;Great Applebees 1 pm!

I got a heart attack for His ass!

TY

Basin Street Blues

Rather than going home,I went to My parents house,For two reasons,One is knowing how My Granny and Mom had a dislike for Shari they would believe any bad thing I told them about Her,Second was because I was not trying to get into any shit with her before I had to leave for My business trip, So I purposely left My old bedroom door partially open,,,,,knowing they would see Me and rush in asking what Shari had done and I would make up the explanation as I went along,,,,,,And of course Shari will be blowing up my phone.....Surprisingly.....She had not text or called Me once,And when I called her She sent My call to voicemail.....this would not have bothered Me as much had I not been threatened by Erin's ass.....But I would not even entertain that bullshit.....Dumb ass high school thotI already had a plan for that dumb bitch,since Her Dad and Mom already knew She was pregnant.....It won't be hard spreading the word of how Loose that ass is.....At that time

My phone vibrated....it was THE BITCH
HERSELF/////ERIN!
FUCK THATI ignored it and dozed off.....

“Ty.....What You doing here baby?” My mom asked kissing
my cheek...feeling My forehead for any sign of a fever.

“Hey Mama...Just sleeping in peace before I leave for the
Bank’s new fleet of company cars come in,,,We are
expanding to the Uber business!...”

She smiled,And said “That still does not tell Me why you
are here...You have a home remember?”

“Do I ever forget that den of hell?”

“Well!’came by Dad’s voice booming....”It was the den You
chose,,,so.....!”

“Oh You saying I can’t even relax here?”
My Dad said”Son,the day You decided to marry Shari or
should I say Her money,You acted as if this house was but a
shack....And You were gonna get yours by hook or

crook.....So you gotta get Yours.....Meaning...GETTING
YO ASS UP OUTTA YOUR CHILDHOOD BED,,,,,,AND
TRY TO GET BACK INTO THE ONE YOU LEFT IT
FOR!’

My Mom stood not liking what He was saying ,Yet not
saying a damn thing in My defense.....So I got My Ass
up.....I would take My Ass home,,,,,,I had six hours before
My flight....And I could put up with Shari for that smidge of
time.....As I turned to get My phone,My Mom looked at Me
and asked’WHY IN THE HELL IS THERE SOME GIRL
NAMED ERIN TEXTING YOU?’

I looked at Her and turned to leave,She said.....’IF SHARI
PUT YOU OUT.....IT IS YOUR MESS TO FIX
NOT MINE.....SO I WILL LET YOU NOW KNOW
MOST DEFINITELY DON’T RUN YOUR
TEMPTATION’S KNOCK OFF OF OH MOTHER OF
MINE TO ME!’

‘You don’t even like Shari.....So what do You care?’

‘Alot! Since I had to accompany You to get a shot for VD
after Your bachelor party!.....

I slammed the door right before Granny put in her false teeth and her unwanted opinion!

I drove home.....'Where the hell was Shari?
She had been gone a good while because there were three unanswered calls from Her sister Roz and they were all before noon.

As I walked closer into the kitchen Shari had left a short terse note for Me

Tyler

Meeting up for lunch with a long lost family member,She is going through something and I Am gonna hang with Her for a bit.....I for one know first hand how unwanted one can feel by family...Find that Oak Tree and find that shade! Anyway text or call Me later when You get to your flight destination

**Love ,
Shadrian.....**

See always sticking Her damn nose in Her ignorant family and friends instead of breaking Me off with some ass before I had to leave! But as always there is a back up plan for that.....Jay Z Ain't the only one that can stop 99 problems without a bitch being one.But trust as much ass I could say

Erin was a thot mission ;I hope this dumb bitch finds herself some self respect because as I said,By the time I get back from this business trip....Her ass is gonna be the most talked about and blackballed hoe since Karrine ‘Superhead’ Steffans.....I started to text Her and sweet talk Her into forgiving Me,Just to hit it before I left....But I Am not gonna do that shit again.....because to fuck Her again,would mean having to see Her again,,,,Horny,Dog Ass I may be,But not stupid! As for Shari I left no reply to Her note....She could kiss My ass because the way She has been acting She acts as if she got Herself some while visitng Roz.....And Roz probably encouereaged it,,,,,Why did she have to be SOUL SISTA #1 and be there for everybody.....Except Me!.....And I Am not trying to get Her pregnant anytime soon because My ass would be but a hologram in this house!..And Shari woud find out how expensive and costly that would be....But I Am still tripping on My parents behavior today.....But not surprised,My Mom would take My side against Shari’s in a heartbeat,,,,,,,,,Except for the fact She hated a cheating ass man.....So even though She didn’t care for My wife,It did not mean it was ok to cheat on Her!,,,,,Exhausted;I fell

asleep only to be awakened By Shari giving Me the best sex
We have had in the past year.....About damn time.....It
took Me less than ten minutes to explode.....It was not
until then I realized.....I didn't have on a condom.....I
know the first time with Erin,I was too stupid to use
one.....And look where She is trying to take Me!!!!;I
FELT AS IF I HAD BEEN RAPED ! But at the moment,I
had to shower,pretend not to be pissed at Shari,Make My
flight,,,,,,And as soon as I got into My car Erin shot Me a
text

*Erin; You need to think about YOUR
responsibilities.....*

*Me;Look I Am running late to catch My flight....Shari
brought Her
horny ass home and*

Erin;Yeah.....I get horny after a long lunch too!

Me;Sorry about that but I Am headed out of town for business So I can't help ya....have whomever gave your ass a long lunch?

Erin;That would not have even worked,Nor did it cross My mind ...unless You are saying Shari is a switch hitter which I seriously doubt,the way guys kept trying to holla at the two of today during lunch!

Me;WTF?!!!!!!!!!!

This bitch never replied...So I figured,Liar.....But then My phone rang,it was My Mom,probably calling to wish Me a safe trip,And to apologize...

Me;Hey Mama.....You don't need to apologize,,,,,I know Daddy had You cornered,had to leave before Granny started in

Mama;Safe trip baby,,,,But not apologizing for shit....And Since ya whore knew how to dial 411 and got this damn house phone number.....Either You

**straighten this shit out.....Or I will.....I told that tramp
that You are a married man,,,,,And told Her that if Shari
calls Me with some shit.....And leaves Your
ass that YOU WOULD NOT BE STAYING HERE SO
SHE BETTER PREPARE SPACE,,,,,,THEN SHE SAID
HER PARENTS PUT HER OUT....THE THING THAT
GOT ME IS THIS CHILD IS IN HIGH
SCHOOL!!!!.....YOU ARE NOT ONLY A
CHEATER,BUT A DAMN CHILD
MOLESTER.....WHO COULD POSSIBLY BE THE
FATHER OF SAID CHILD'S UNBORN
BABY!.....BYE....BOY....I...COULD.....BYE!'**

She hung up on My ass.....Women always talk of
understanding.....THAT IS A LIE....MADE UP BY A
WOMAN!

Erin

Let The Good Time Roll

I put on such a display of being kicked out of My parents house due to being pregnant by a married man who lived in Charlotte,of course I told Her I didn't know He was married until his wife showed up and out at My parents home! Shari sat and shed tears at the horrifying thought of a parent doing so,then I told Her to promise not to tell Ty that his parents,My own Aunt would not let Me stay!

She said''Well that does not surprise Me! Mrs.Harris is not even right....I don't talk to them but once or twice a year,,,,And as long as I don't read their obituaries in the news,then I Am good....!''

As she talked I paired My phone to hers,and got Ty's mom's house number and mobile,but I would se the landline number;Could say I got it from Directory Assistance.

Shari said 'Tell Ya what...Ty is leaving for six days, So come stay with Me...And when He gets back the three of Us will figure out something,,,,, Ty will not let You be homeless.....You are family!'

'But I Am still in high school...have no money to pay My way, Except to make sure You come home to a clean home, And a Hot meal!' I. wolf cried,

'How could you do that, being in school and pregnant?.....You just go pack, And once We get You settled in ...You can repay Me by getting that diploma for starters....Hell Ty's Mom had him when she was in Her Senior year, two weeks after she graduated....But to hear her, You would think she had a Harvard Law Degree!'

We both howled as I Thanked Her, And headed home to pack My clothes....OOOH.....PRETTY GIRLS LEARN TO WORK IT EARLY!

I got home before My parents did, So I just packed and wrote them a letter.....telling them not to worry about Me.....Of Course I knew they would be just that.....**WORRIED**....But of Course Mommie knew I was gonna be just fine,,,,,She knew I was her protege' and Like Her I stopped at nothing until I got it.....My brother however would be trying to put hands on whomever disgraced Me.....But for now I Am not gonna blow up Ty's spot.....At least since I would Be laying My head there.....As for Shari....Yea She was gonna see exactly the type of man She is married to.....And I was gonna be her seeing eye dog!!

In the meantime I had to be a bit messy.....starting with placing a call to the residence of William E and Katarina Harris.....Since She had such dislike for Shari,I figured, These people would be glad to know that Ty had been seeing Me.....And that I was carrying his child.....

'HELLO.....WHY IS THIS THE SAME NUMBER THAT KEPT TEXTING MY MARRIED SON AND IS NOW CALLING THIS HOUSE....RESPECTFUL AS SHIT?!'

‘EXCUSE ME?’

‘DON’T CALL THIS HOUSE AGAIN,,,,HIS WIFE MAY NOT BE MY CUP OF TEA...BUT YOUR TRIFLING ASS CANNOT EVEN COME CLOSE TO BEING WHAT SHE IS TO MY SON.....’

‘WELL I AM BUT 17 YEARS OLD.....YOUR SON TOOK ADVANTAGE OF ME.....MY PARENTS PUT ME OUT.....BECAUSE I AM FUCKING PREGNANT!

‘WHHHHATTT?!!!!.....THAT NO GOOD ASS DOG!.....I AM TIRED OF COVERING FOR HIS STD’S ,AND ABORTED BASTARD KIDS TO COVER FOR HIS ASS TO KEEP SHARI FROM FINDING OUT.....HOW MUCH YOU NEED TO HAVE THAT HOVERED?’

Needless to say....I was shocked...That bitch Shari had Me thinking this was a uppity bitch...But this old ass chick was the Front Hoodrat In Charge!

‘LISTEN TO ME TEEN MOM GHETTOVER SEASON 1.....I DO NOT WANT TO KNOW SHIT ABOUT YOU.....JUST PICK UP A MANILLA ENVELOPE MARKED “FFRFH.ORG” AN ABORTION....OR THE ONE I PAID FOR LAST YEAR WAS \$350 ,SO I AM LEAVING \$1200 IN THAT ENVELOPE...HANDLE THAT SHIT....TAKE YA YOUNG STUPID ASS BACK TO SCHOOL.....!

‘MRS.HARRIS.....THIS IS YOUR GRANDCHILD.....HOW COULD YOU?,,BY THE WAY WHAT IS “FFRFH.ORG”

‘FUNDS FOR RANDOM FERTILE HOES!’

She then slammed the phone into My Ear after telling Me where to pick up the envelope at 6 a.m.Now all I had to do is stay at Shari’s tonight,Get up and convince Ashley to pick Me up at bus stop and drive Me to get the money.....Actually my story was gonna be Ty gave it to Me

to stay at a motel until He got back in town.....Plus I
promised Her \$200 dollars.....I knew She would be down!
So as for now...Unlike Dorothy's dumb ass.....I Am not off

Shari

This Little Light Of Mine

I was actually kind of excited having Erin stay with Me while Ty was out of town, My heart broke for Her, Because someone I knew and loved came from that type of situation.... You see Roz is not My biological sister; Her Mom was My Dad's younger sister, Angela, Angela got pregnant at a very young age, And My Grandma's husband being the bible thumper He was put My Aunt Angela out.... But My Dad and two of his brother's put foot to his ass..... And My Mom packed Angela's clothing and brought her to the house We were living in,,,,, It was great having Aunt Angela live with us,,, I had a great family but with Aunt Angela around, She and Mommie would gossip all day and night, But I recall the week our lives tragically made a turn for the worse one day My Mom, Angie and I were watching tv and Mommie said ,

‘Angie....do you see Me as Your Sister in law or your friend?’

Without a second to waste ‘Aunt Angie said’Neither!...I see You as My sister!...Always will be.....”

“Same here,But I need You to talk with Me ,My Mother and I about something!

Aunt Angie knew She could trust Grandma Yvonne also,Grandma came into the house and I got up to leave the room,I was a child but I knew ‘THE LORD DOES NOT MAKE BIG JUGS FOR SMALL EARS.....Meaning when grown ass women called a summit

But Mommie told Me to stay and listen.....And as I did.....Another knock on the door was Gram Red....My Daddy’s Mom.....’Hey Baby.....Where your Mommie and Auntie”...She sounded as sweet as could be..... .

‘They are watching tv.....”

As soon as Gram Red entered the room She became a totally different woman,

Aunt Angie had been getting farther into Her pregnancy.....And being that She hadn't seen Or even took any of Her calls.....She looked at Angie and Said"Baby...I Am so sorry.....I TRULY AM!"

My Grandma Yvonne asked"Did you even stop to ask this girl any questions about her pregnancy?"

'Why should I it is obvious She was out whoring and got pregnant by some fool She hardly even knows!"

My Mom interjected or someone ;YOU' hardly even know.....meaning that fake ass Freakin"Deacon Reed ...He PUT HER OUT.....BECAUSE YOUR FRIGID ASS DIDN'T PUT OUT...AND WHEN SHE GOT OLDER SHE

STOPPED,PUTTING OUT SO HE PUT HER OUT!”

The look on Gram Red's face ,Even to ME ...gave signs that She already knew.....

She began bringing food and gifts to Angie,Even took the week off to stay with us the week Aunt Angie was slated to go into labor...I remember the day as if it was only Yesterday,Gram Red called Me into the room to say She had to run an errand down the block,BUT, 'Grandpa Reed wanna see Yall!'

I knew there was nothing I could do about it.....Aunt Angie saw Him and went hysterical....He walked up to her grabbed Her trying to force Himself on Her..I grabbed the poker from the fireplace ,but being not more than four years old,the hit only startled Him,,,,,He grabbed Me and began dragging Me out of the room,Aunt Angie got up and started bleeding everywhere...He saw this and left...I dialed 911 ,then My Mommie.....She and Daddy rushed home.....Aunt Angela had already bled out too much to survive,But the baby survived,Roz has been with us ever since,A week after Roz was born,,,My Gram Red,Who never returned that day ,Arrived home to find Her husband dead;he had been badly

beaten but what actually caused his death was a nipple from a baby's bottle was lodged in his throat.....Strangely enough I remember earlier that week Mom ranted that She had gotten new baby bottles but one of the nipples didn't fit the rim.....Gram Red was arrested for it,People gossiped that She did it to cover the fact Roz was her husband's child.....But To this day.....I know that man died at the hands of not one...but two women....So I Am definitely gonna have Erin's back...And so was Ty...This is his cousin and family should always be there for each other!.....At least that is the Mack family way

Erin

Try A Little Tenderness

Shari met Me At the old Greer Depot, Where I told Her I would be...Couldn't have Her know where I Could still and would forever be allowed to lay my head..So when I tear up her marriage,She couldn't do any bougie/ghetto shit.

'How did you get here with three bags? She asked.

Lie ready to be told along with sobs.'When I asked My baby to let Me stay at one of his rental properties;Before You offered;He said NO....But after You invited Me He seemed to be all too willing to drop Me off and drove Me here....For You to pick Me up!'

All I could do is think to Myself.....But aloud I said''Not being snooty or anything,But Your Baby's Father is not welcome to lay up in My husband and My house....I know You made a mistakeBut the man is **MARRIED**....!'' ,And I want no parts of what the two of You do in sin!

I was lmao inside Bitch please...You are in the leading role.....And Your hubby is the co star...but I Am the leading lady!....I really wanted to go off...instead I just pretended to be tired,,,,,And wanted to get to sleep,explaining I Am not gonna deliver until at least a week after I graduate....

She got this smile on Her face.....And told Me that HER HOUSE,WAS MY HOUSE.....As long as I do not disrespect Her wishes.....I agreed....went to the guest room....before I knew it....It was 5 a.m. and Ashley was texting Me.....

Ashley; see You in 30 minutes.....

Me;OK....

I got up early in order to evade Shari.....Who told Me She is up and At Em' at 7 a.m Monday-Friday....But it seemed to Me She was awake off and on all night trying to reach Ty....Hell I knew I was.....And like Her...I had yet to reach Him....In fact I was taking the day off from School I Intended to from on Ashley by telling Her I no longer needed Her to rent a room for Me,,,,She was so anxious to find out why,,,,Her damn tires could be heard screeching from a mile away.

‘Hurry up Chick,,,,I Am trying to get back to the apartment and get in a few more hours of sleep..!’ Ashley yawned

‘Cool!’ I answered hoping Mrs.H was not trying to bullshit Me or set Me up.....

We arrived at the corner of the old spot that was once Dobson Brothers Cotton Gin once stood.....And to My

surprise the cash was there....I ran back to the car,,,with a lie designed to make a reluctant hater hate.....

‘Ash,I only need You to check Me into Marriott for tonight
Promise not to tell if I share something with You?;
‘Whaddup Chick?’

‘Ty lied to Shari....He will be with Me while out of town,,,,,He wants to discuss the baby situation!’

Ashley proved Me right in two areas....A person will believe a lie over the truth everytime...And that She was gonna start hating.....

“Yeah,,,Discuss dismembering Your body ,baby and all.....dump You in the River....then catch a plane.....Problem solved.....HONEY.....SHARI.....I AM HOME!’ She smirked

‘Ashley...You need to realize that just because Ty overlooked You to get at Me ,I Am not even listening to You or the twins bash Ty.....I swear Green Ain’t your color

I was glad when We pulled up at the Marriott.....Ashley rented the room,,,,I paid Her,She came into the room with Me just to keep suspicion at bay,Then after snarling in haterism at the elegance of the room....She said “I gotta go before your lover/murderer gets here!’

I smiled’Yep.....long night...then flight to catch.....With My Man!

Ashley snarled....’BUDDY HOLLY BITCH!’ and turned to leave .

I WAS LIKE.....WHO THE FUCK IS BUDDY HOLLY?.

I Am gonna have to ask My Lost in the 40-60s era cousin Kennedy Brown...I Am sure she knows.....

Ty

It's Got The Whole World Shaking!

I Am so glad to be able to relax with My boys before the Auto transfer later this week...But I was still about to have a curse out session with Erin when she text Me back..I have text her dumb ass a dozen times,,any other time she would have been blowing My phone up.....But something told Me to block My number and dial her home number,

It was answered on the third ring...'Yeah..Can I holla At Erin?''

'Erin,,is not here....Ty!' I thought to Myself WTF?!!''

"This is Trina.....Her Mom...I know everything.....So don't try to come at Me with some lie about My daughter being a Ho!.....You Child Molester!'',,,,,,But Act Right By My baby girl and **ME**.....

‘Yo...This ain’t No Damn Ty.....Ya daughter is a ho plain and simple...tell You what...let ‘TY’ be babay daddy to the bastard!’

‘Yeah...Whatever Ty!.....Ask Shari where Erin is?!

Then She laughed,and slammed the phone in My ear!

DOUBLEDAYUM!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Soon as She hung up.....Shari text

Shari; Tyler.....We Need to talk,,,,,Although this is more My house than Yours...I think You May want to hear this out!

Me;Shari...Baby Please...Can We wait until I get home ...I will explain,listen,talk,or whatever....

Shari;Calm Down Tyler...I Am just letting you know that I thought Your family was disrepectful and hateful to Me But that Damn Aunt and Uncle of Yours put Your cousin out.....She reached out to Me via Facebook.....She is pregnant by some married asshole....And Your so called family turned their back on her.....

Me; Which cousin?...you know all My female cousins are loose?

Shari;Erin

I threw up all the liquor I had been consuming!!!!
All I heard was Shari.....'SEE TY...THATS ALL YALL
DO WHEN OUT OF TOWN ON BUSINESS GET
DRUNK AND FUCK UP NICE MOTEL SUITES
CHARGED TO MY DAD'S FUCKING
COMPANY.....TYLER!!!.....TYLER!!!
DAMN DRUNK!

I just lay there as the phone went dead.....`And I wish I was
Being buried with it!

Trina

Ain't Misbehavin!"

My Daughter Erin was alot of things ,But a Whore was not...and is not one of them,,,,See...I know Ty personallyIt just never dawned on Me until that day He showed up at My home telling My husband all that bullshit about helping Erin,I know His Mother ,Katarina...I don't like putting My business like that but since Ty wanna degrade My daughter,And brand her a Ho.....Let Me tell You how or should I say met Ty for the first time.....Although Katarina is not a friend per se but I do a few ERRANDS, for Her every now and again,And these ERRANDS were funded by Her Mother in Law ,Mrs.Vera Harris.....And trust If they ever tried to act up on My Ass...Not only will I go down...Their ship would shame their wannabe better than all right into the cell next to Mine!

And they would all know what went down years ago,I was there each time one of Ty's hoes either gave Him an STD....Or tried to have The Old Keep A Nigga Baby She had an older with the Government Birth Certificate that would read CHA CHING!

In fact I have been performing these cutthroat abortions before Ty was even born,But there are two that stick out to Me and have given Me a permanent remorse that is one of which happened late one night when I also met Shari briefly for the first time,Yet Even to this day She Seems to have blocked out the eventOr does She really not remember the night Her Aunt Angela died.....And to this day..although the forced inducement of labor due to the coat hanger botched abortion,,Angela died..But The baby survived and was adopted by Her Parents,They loved and treated Roz wonderfully/....Better than Angie's ass would have done..That eases the situation a bit...But not much.....And I have taken care of a few ;ERRANDS' of that nature for Ty and his Maury Show Grads.....And funny thing is...Ty could actually be an innocent man,But as far as I Am concerned I just by clowning My Baby.....He must have

forgotten that I work at Village of Pelham Hospital's vital switchboard...And with a few Docs on staff...Who I school in on house How Taught Me to get access to Dana's Lab.....D.(A)NA.....In fact I knew it wasn't just Ty who could be the father.....OH.....SO YALL DIDN'T KNOW ERIN IS ENGAGED TO THE REAL BABY DADDY?!!!! But She *wants* Ty...And being My image and inner vision My daughter and I share is.....uncanny.....And We always get what We want....And Momma need to get Ty ass up off some keep quiet...NAW...Correction some BITCH SHUT UP.....Either way...I got that ass...And so does Erin!.....Like I said My daughter is not a whore.....Can't deny She is Ratchet.....And I give Her ass a standing ovation for that.....Last week out of the blue Katarina as if She does not act all new when she walks beneath Her Halo...I remember when Her ass wasn't married...or ***SAVED***...

Katarina;Girl....Ty dumb ass gonna need another dry cleaning(illegal abortion)

Me;Girl I don't work for the cleaners anymore.....Wish I could Help.....But You are not having Me abort *OUR* Grandchild?!

Katarina;WHAT THE HELL DID YOU SAY????.....DAMMIT!...YOU GOTTA DO THIS SHIT...OR THAT BITCH OF A WIFE WILL RUIN HIS LIFE!

Me;Maybe You Need to pray on it.....while sippin your bourbon out of a camouflaged Coca Cola can!

Then I promptly hung up....Knowing this was gonna be a MaMa/Daughter Cash sweep!

Ty

Pilgrim Of Sorrow

Erin's dumb ass finally returned My call....I lit into Her ass!

'Bitch! Why the fuck you laying up in My house telling Shari You are My Damn cousin?...Then calling My Mom?'

'Ty.....You better be glad I didn't tell Her I Am having ya damn kid!'She yelled

'Erin,,,,You are one fucked in the head kid!.....How You get to be so damn messy''I asked

'Naw Boo it is You who are messy.....lying to Me about being single!'

'I never said I was single.....You only asked if I was dating anyone.....!'

'And You LIED and said No!'

‘Well I wasn’t.....I AM
MARRIED.....M..A..R..R..I..E..D!’

“Well if You plan to stay M..A..R..R..I..E..D for the time
being?...Better relish the last of the Tyler and Shari
show.....I can see the headlines now”MAN WHORE
WHO LIED ABOUT BEING SINGLE ,CONFESSED TO
GETTING TEEN PREGNANT LOSES WIFE.....AND
HIGH PAYING JOB!”

She Cackled like the Teen Witch that She is....

“You know what?...Stay there but when I get home We
gotta come to some sort of agreement....I have no intention
of leaving Shari.....You are just lucky that My Mom loves
Me More than She hates You or Shari So I know She won’t
say shit....I will be home a day early...While Shari is at
work.....You and I gotta hash this out!.

‘Ty.....I will be in school.....By the way ,Since I Am still in
school..Shari had Me transferred to Riverside High since it
is closer to Our home!’

I was fish grease hot.....Shari was dumb as hell...'Bye Erin!.....And don't drink My damn Orange Juice! "

I hung up and had a bright idea...Shari was dumb...But Erin was Super Stupid.....Maybe Her being in the house with Shari and Me....I could keep Her quiet,until I can rent her a place after I get proof of paternity,And since Shari and My family never communicated unless it wa an emergency...Or God forbid when someone Dies,And We attend funerals of mutual friends or relatives.....Ijut wanna be sure the next funeral won't be mineBut It will be Erin's if this bitch causes Me any problems,.....!

A few seconds later there was a knock at My door....Without asking who was there,I opened the door and there stood Two gorgeous Gabrielle Union looking twins,Stood dressed only in silk robes

"Hi..Pierre sent us to cheer You up,As I looked at the adjourning room,And My brother in law,Pierre;Who is One of My best friends,And is also Shari's brother..But He knew

I love Shari But He also enjoys a good time with various women, And told Me that He knew what it was like being raised with Shari so He knows the mean bitch deep within, And that as long as I didn't get to the point Of disrespecting to embarrassment done to cause Her hurt.....I tipped My glass to him as he closed the door with his two cuties in front of Him.....I was A man well pleased until I woke up the next morning the girls were gone.....I heard a loud BOOM BOOM''''

I opened the door.....There Stood Pierre

'Man them bitches stole My fucking wallet!!!! Had My \$8000 in cash in it!"

I ran to look at My shit...and My \$1000 in cash was missing!!!

And Just when it seemed nothing else could go wrong...Shari called....

‘Hey Tyler....You still asleep at this hour.....Anyway what has Pierre talking shit in the background?’

Without missing a beat or Never without a quick lie...I answered”We were Robbed earlier today during an early morning car fleet check in,We left our complaints with front desk....Housekeeping Bitches had to do it!’

Shari gasped....’What?!!!!.....Handle Your businessErin is napping and I Am letting the poor girl get Her rest..Been through so much because of a dog ass nigga not only being older than Her but married ?....If You ever got a jump off pregnant....I would Castrate You ...After My family fired your ass!’”

She giggled...”Just kidding!’

I laughed but Something told Me.....She was not just kidding!

Erin

Just Another Day

I got out of school early today ,To hang with
Ashley,Shanda,And Landa...We were all going to have a
girl's day and catch up...And For some reason Ashley had
tod them that Ty and I were creeping thi week,,While He is

supposed to be out of town,,,,I knew Se would tell them....And once again...I knew they would hate!”

Shanda asked Me,”How is it playing”Wifey” today...’Not My Baby’’ next week with Ty?”

I was smirking,,,’It is just a mere stepping stone to Him leaving that dumb bitch Shari....For Me and His baby!”

Landa said’’On the subject of the baby.....How do You know it is Ty’s...You hooked up with Him around the same time that Mario had just left back for USC?....Really....Think about it....’’

Ashley just rolled Her eyes at Me once again telling Me How wrong I Am..Yet I notice She didn’t mention the cash I had given Her earlier in the week.....But I just played My Role all the remainder of the day.....Still I managed to get through it...And Had Them drop Me back at the hotel,Where they thought I would Be staying with Ty,But as soon as they left...I text Shari

**Me; ‘OTW home....rode to a job interview after school
,Hoping I get it it....I truly need to start planning for
being a single Mom!**

**Shari;NO! You need to worry about Your health and the
baby will not run you bankrupt...And as I told You....Ty
and I are Here For You!**

**Me;Well at least You are.....I don't think Ty wants to
come home and find Me there,And tell My
business....And It may cause conflict because your
family seem to embrace each other more than Mine and
Ty's.....’’**

**Shari;Damn Ty's family...This is *My* HOUSE.....Ty is
living in the house I already had when We met,So his ass
knows better than to think He can tell Me who I can or
cannot have in MY house.....You will not be be a
problem ,And Trust his family and I only tolerate each
other,But I avoid any function they may have,And then I
only speak to be cordial.....I doubt it very seriously they**

are stupid enough to step to Me When.....I support their son.....Meaning He works and makes His money through what I brought to the table.....

Me;Thanks, I really appreciate YouBe Home in thirty minutes.....

Shari called'Hey...gonna grab some take out...Will see you in a bit...I am pulling up to the pick up window now,So don't worry about getting in the kitchen making those nasty ass sardine and cheese sandwiches...She laughed...

So Did I until I heard her hang up,I heard 'Thanks For Choosing Burger King....My name is Shalanda.....May I take Your order?''

I hung up...Hoping neither of those bitches would find time to do anything other than getting the Burger King order straight.....Still gone Have it *My Way*.....!

I got back To Shari's before She got Home....Unfortunately.....I didn't make it there before Ty did.....And He felt it necessary to try to threaten Me....But after hearing the shit about Shari being the HBIC ...And that Ty has to depend on Her family to keep His nice high paying job.....I just realized.....He played Me.....He has no money of His own,,,,,Meaning.....I fucked a nigga as broke as hell...trying to do the same thing I was doing...trying to make a come up.....And Ashley and the twins had to know,,,which is why they were so smug and adamant that Ty would not leave Shari.....They knew He was just an errand boy....At the Company.....And Loan Officer.....was just an upgrade from a bank teller!! But I Am My Mother's Daughter.....I decided to switch it up on his ass...Because If He tells Shari any bullshit about MeI knew He would be ass out too....So that gave me something called...P.O.W.E.R!.....

Shari

Bring It On Home To Me

I arrived home to see that Ty had made it back to town, And He and Erin seemed to be in the midst of talking about their relatives, Because Ty seemed to be generally upset... I Am sure it was about how His self righteous Aunt and Uncle put a pregnant teen out..... Obviously a few other people know how Erin being pregnant , But It startled Me to find out another rumor about Her..... Seems old dude had a few allies who had also hit with Erin,,,,,, But I overheard someone mention a guy named Mario... So I guess He is the Married guy... Because other than refer to Him as Her sperm donor..... Erin never told Me the dude name.....

“I Am home peeps!” I said loudly causing both to jump ,,,,

“Shari,,,,,,was just filling Ty in on a few things that went down with My parents putting Me out.....And Thanking Him for allowing Me to live with You all!” Erin said ,

Ty was still Wearing his business suit ,Ran over to relieve Me of the bags I held....Then He kissed Me so passionately in front of Erin,,,,,I was a bit embarrassed never been one to display public display of affection....And it seemed to make Erin a bit uncomfortable.....But to Me it was a welcome change...One that I hope He would continue to go along the path.....Because I Am hoping By having his cousin live with us,By having her around,,Ty would warm up to the idea of Us having one of our own.....

Erin broke the ice”You two make Me wish I had a relationship with My baby’s Dad.....But unlike You Ty.....He was not man enough to take up and stand alone and do the right thing!”

I was glad I had bought two extra Whoppers since Ty showed up home early...Ty sat at the table not eating very

much spoke.”Erin,,,,,Some men just don’t have paternal ambition....And You are not gonna make him change.....”

Erin glared down at Her food and said”Shari ...What would You have done had Ty gotten someone pregnant outside ,yet during Your Marriage?”

Ty looked at Me...But I felt He was throwing shade at Erin for getting pregnant By a married man,And also at Me hinting He didn’t want kids.

“Ty loves Me,And I know He would never hurt Me like that But if He did.....He would be sorry ..Trust.....I love You Ty.....I truly do but You would be an out of work walking an imaginary dog homeless motherfucker if You ever did that shit to Me.....OH and baby momma would be even sorrier.....I would have her life so fucked up....Government Assistance,Food Stamps,And section 8 would not have to approve a damn thing because.....I doubt seriously Ty would have enough money to eat at the soup kitchen,,,,,Let alone feed a trifling tramp !”

Erin nervously laughed and said ‘Thats right Shari.....as you said before.....’Ty is living up in your shit.....And You control the finances,And sign his pay check!” She laughed and raised her soda in a toast!”

Ty looked horrified...But truth be told.....Erin should not have repeated it...But I never should have said it.....But I changed to conversation.

“Tyler was did the Marriott do about housekeeping stealing from the guest...../”

He stared ahead angry at what Erin had said....He answered”They fired four people,seems theft always went down on their shifts!”

Erin shrieked”Dayum...how trifling can people be to steal from their own place of employment.....!”

Ty said'' Yeah,,,,,But I gotta charge it to the game,,,,,Just glad no one found the safe ...But they got \$ 1,8000 between Pierre and Me...!”

Erin Yawned and said She had to get her bath,And call it a night....Although it was Friday,She could sleep in late tomorrow and Ty and I would spend a bit of alone time by going to a movie then catch an early movie.....And I could talk to Him about our future and this time ...I can wait a few more weeks before I will know if I should reveal the first EPT test that showed two stripes.....

He better get happy PDQ though....Just hoping Erin being here will not cause too much conflict between Ty nd Me...He semmed cool with the idea....But truth be told omething tells Me He doesn't care for her any more than the rest of his family does,I could never treat a family member the way Erin is being treated by Her own family....And She always said Ty is Her fave cousin,,,,,Shit...if that is how fave goes,,,,,I really feel for the least fave!.....

.

Erin

Yeah Man!!!!

My Mom Trina was blowing up My phone....I text her that I was having dinner with Shari and Ty.....and would call Her after we are done eating.....She sent Me a Text that was very interesting.....Seems that Ty lied about the nature of how He was robbed....Seems four chicks pounced on both He and Pierre,Shari's brother.....That goes to show some men ain't shit...Ty is Married to his sister and They both take two chicks at a time to their adjoining suites And were fucked...then really fucked....Meaning these chicks Were on a paid for mission.....Katarina refused to give Me an illegal abortion,,,But She gave Me \$1800 to shut up.....But She figured out a way to keep Me far away from Her son,But Although William Harris was Ms.Vera's Mom,She and Katarina had a true mother daughter bond.....And both had been around in their pre marital days.....They were as

Deceptive as My Mom and I were...But Ms.Vera was old school with Her Dirt!

I decided this call had to be made ASAP!

‘Cuzzos...I Love you guys,But Gotta get a bit of rest...’ I said excusing Myself from the table,and hugging Shari and Ty,Who went tense....Yet I felt him growing hard immediately.....

I ran upstairs to call Mom’s mobile phone,didn’t want to chance My Daddy answering if I called the landline

Mom;Heard You got \$1800 and You need to make sure not to say shit....You don’t mention the fact it was Your cousin Tami and three of her friends robbed them of the amount Katarina paid...She had to get both Ty and Pierre...because it had to seem randomTo throw off the trail...they paid another guest to lie,And say they were robbed also

Me; Oh,,,so Grandma Harris...actually made Ty pay the \$1800 Dollars unbeknownst to Him.....?

Mom; Girl where else is she gonna get the money ?....The Harris family gives the persona of being high post and affluent for their city....Shit...Ty has been stealing from company money to pay His parents bills.....

Me; Dayum.....So How does He manage to get access to company funds?, When Shari is the head of payroll?’

Mom; Easy for years ...He has been accessing Shari’s account and withdrawing money through her name.....

Me; Damn....Well tell those bitches I had the abortion, and left town....I got a marriage to fuck up and not much longer to do it!’

She laughed, We exchanged I love You’s and said ‘Goodnight’

I got up to use the restroom and while searching for a roll of tissue...I found a positive EPT test behind one of the bottom boards!

Oh Hell Naw this bitch is Not pregnant by My fucking man...And if so,,,,,,She would not be for long!

Shanda

The Great Pretender

I was texting Landa and Ashley in a group text'

Me;This Young dumb bitch is living with Shari and that damn Ty?

Landa;Twin ,,,You lying!!!!

Ashley;Stop playing...Erin would not be doing no dumb shit like that!

Me;She is telling Shari that Ty is Her cousin,whose parents kicked Her out And this lowdown dirty dog is going along with it....Who is gonna tell Shari....His Mom and Grandma treat her like shit....And probably knows about Erin ,just to fuck with Shari!

Ashley;What You mean?...who is gonna tell Her.....And who told You?..Because I Am not entertaining this bullshit.....

Landa;You trying to go there and call My Twinny a lie?

Ashley;Nope....I believe Shanda,,,Just can't believe Erin is that messy!...Who is the source?

Shanda;Shari!!!!!!...She told Me that Ty's Pregnant 17 year old cousin was pregnant by a married man.....Who caused Erin's parents to kick Her out....

She reached out to Shari via Facebook,,and Threw a pity party.....Shari the bleeding heart invited Her to stay with Her and Erin's fave cousin Ty....

Ashley; Neither one of us are gonna tell Shari.....But I have someone who will! Trust Me,,,This shit is gonna get real.....

Shanda;Especially since Shari told Me She ,Herself is 8 weeks pregnant!

Landa;Ash.....Girl work Your magic!.....

Ashley:Will Do!

Shari

Keep Movin' On

Erin has been here a month..And to say I like her less each day is a mild understatement...Seems whenever Ty and I are trying for some alone time...She starts some shit.....For instance Yesterday,She told Ty that She would appreciate it if He would sign out of his Facebook,Because she does not need to know His business....

But I let it pass.Until She came to Me saying words no wife wants to hear..;'

Girl ...Ty is talking to some chick named Peachez'

He had used The laptop yesterday and didn't sign out of His Facebook,And some girl named Peachez met him on the last trip He had made.....And She was Thanking Him for

\$1800....The same amount he claimed was stolen from him and My brother Pierre combined...Which means Pierre is a fucking snake ass whore of a brother.....And was aware of and helping My husband playing Me.....But what I read next broke My heart

Ty;But I will leave Her and this bullshit marriage behind.....

Peachez; What's this shit about Her being pregnant?

Ty;So what?.....Accidents happen all the time to cause miscarriages...And I have no problem with that..Shit...I married for the money not the Family..She signs My pay checks...and Through the company's account I pay My parents and Grandma ,who lives with them at the company's expense unbeknownst to Shari or Her family.....But They can be put in the streets as far as I Am concerned....I want You..and only You is all I need

Peachez;What about Shari being pregnant?,,,,,wtf?

Ty;She has not said shit about beig pregnant...Because fuck that....If She is...and the baby is born,,,,,I would and could divorce Her,And get joint custody of the kid.providing they pay Me monthly for the weekends I had the kid in My care...This baby ...like Shari is just a dollar sign...As for My parents Shari will kick them out once they find out I Am leaving HerFor You....And when the kid is in My custody....I can let a nanny keep the kid ...Until time to return to the Bitch!

Peachez; What is the hold up?

Ty'My stupid ass cousin,,,,She is always on My ass about Shari!

I could't concentrate at that moment,,,I called Erin into the room

‘Wassup Cuzzo?’ She asked...

‘No lecture or opinion but I found out I Am pregnant..and once again He had left his Facebook up.....Bottomline,,,I Am scheduling n abortion....And.....” Before I could finish she said loudly,

‘Of Course I will go with You,,,,And keep Your secret for life....I didn’t want you to find out this way....But The bitch is going around saying She is pregnant with Ty’s Baby....And Was keeping Her pockets lined....All on Your family’s dime!’

I thanked Her,And was grateful for the appointment I as given two days away.....All I remember feeling afterwards was a different story...I hated Aborting My child,,,But Ty was not gonna use My child to fund His lifestyle with the next bitch.....I had planned to wait until My heart healed before I told My Dad to fire Ty and that I was filing for divorce....At least I thought I could waitLittle did I know.....My world ws gonna be turned upside down!

Erin

The Last Mile of The Way.....

I sat in the lobby...laughing inside as Shari was having Her procedure done...She was talking about How She is done with Ty and that although He was getting fired and the fuck outta Her house.....I was welcome to stay...Because She had read The messages between Peachez and Ty.....And Ty referred to Me as choosing Shari's side over His.....She wanted Me to wait a few days until She handled healing process.....Before Ty would get His Come uppannce,,,Unfortunately....Katarina Harris Fucked it up.....Ty,Shari and I were eating dinner when I kept getting text messages from Ashley,And both the twins.....Saying We needed to talk,,,,,,I never replied.....

Shari

Somebody Have Mercy

Ty and I were eating dinner with Erin ,Both their phones blowing up....But from the ringtone,coming from Ty's Phone He kept sending his Straight to voice mail it was His mom He was avoiding.

Ten minutes later it began again,Both phones blowing up....Not much later there was a banging at My door,Still weak from what Ty thought was the flu,He got up from the table and went to the door.....

His Mom barged in..."You no good ass dirty bitch....You not even good enough for My son!" then before I could

protest She turned and slapped the shit out of Ty.....And then I realized She was mad at Erin,,,,,,Not Me....

I tried to calm Mrs,Harris down and not to put her hands on Erin..

‘Mrs.Harris,You need to calm down?! Why are you trying to fuck up your own son,,,,And Niece....?’

She ignored Me and Stepped face to face with Erin,,,,,,And said ‘PACK YOUR SHIT...AND MY DOG ASS SON AS WELL AND GET YOUR LYING WHORING ASS OUT!’

Not only was I confused ,But I remember Shanda,Her Sister and another girl....Who all informed Me that I was being played..Erin and Ty were not blood related.....Except for his baby which She was carrying.....After all I did for Her,She set Me up.And so did Ty.....She encouraged and jumped into the cuzzo got your back zone.....While I aborted My baby due to a bogus email account She made.....All the while Ty claimed to never want kids...Had gotten this bitch 17 year old girl Pregnant,,,And lied To get

Me to support the whole thing.....She accompanied Me to kill My baby.....Only to have Her own babyWith My husband.....I remember everything going black.....

Erin

Keep Movin' On!

This fossil faced ex hooker of a Mama,Katarina Harris followed by Her old Resurrected Mother in Law burst into the door...Yelling “You dumb ass Bitch! Pack Your Shit and get the Fuck out!”

Shari stood up to try to figure out who these bitches were talking about...At first She thought Mrs.Harris was talking to Her....But when Mrs.Harris turned around and slapped the shit out of Ty!....”Boy....You always been a dog....But You got this Ho claiming to be pregnant from You? Laying up in Your wife's house!”

Shari looked at Me... I was like a dumb deer staring into a headlight, But It gets better... Ashley's mom, Whom Ashley told Her what was up with Me and Ty...not to mention recording our last few conversations....
Dumb bitch knew all along that Ty's Mom and Her Mom, Ms. Marlene's best friend.....

Ashley said" You gonna have a lie for this was also? ...
Bitch...As soon as I realized what You were doing...I turned snitch
....Plus You should be glad I didn't tell until I realized these ladies were gonna grab and abort that baby.
....Like Everytime Ty gets someone pregnant outside His marriage....!"

Mrs. Harris threw in...
."You better be glad My cousin Corrine is going through some shit on Her home front...Or that bastard and You would be a grim event in History!...Now it is too late ,But Go pack Ya damn bags, Shari...You always wondered why I don't like You....It has nothing to do with You...But the bullshit You let My son put all type of shit on You...And act

too damn blind to see His ass is married to the money NOT You....You are too good for Ty....all the time He has bragged about what bills He pays for his parents and Grandma.....He has stolen it from Your family....Only to borrow money from us to make a baby go away!....”

Before She could finish ... Shari hit the floor with a thud..As Ashley began to play a recording,From pairing Her phone to Mine,getting text between Me and Shari....Where I had told Shari that I would go with her to have the abortionAll the while knowing I was only doing it,So that Her ass would not be having Ty’s baby...And How Ty had told Me that if She were pregnant,He would leave Her....She killed Her baby.....Over what I had told Her,But as She lay on the floor,Ty ran to pick Her up....Proclaiming His love for Her,And He would be faithful to Her....

I ran towards Him only to be yoked up By Ashley ...

Mrs.Harris said” BITCH I SAID PACK YO SHIT!”

I yelled”I'm not going anywhere....I have no place to go...You Nosy old Bitch!”

She got Me into a Chokehold...”Fuck it! Don't packYou won't need them...Your Ass is gonna be In My house Until You have this baby....Then....Your ass will be leaving on the first thing smoking.....!”

“I Am not going anywhere!..Ty....tell Your Mama...To back up....!

Before He could Say Anything.... I heard a Click...

“BitchI said Move! You leaving this house tonight...Dead or Your Choice!” Said Ty’s Grandma....

I may be young but not foolish...Shari was coming to in Ty’s arms....He lifted Her up....Walking her past Me...She stopped and spit in My Face...I lunged forward only to feel Ty’s fist connect with My face... Now it was My turn to fade to an uncertain black!

To Be Continued

I Ain't Gonna Cheat On You...No More!

By Kennedy Brown

Flashback Summer 2006

I Am so excited about My upcoming graduation. Not because I Am looking forward to the post grad shenanigans that my classmates were forever gabbing about though. Mind you I said classmates, not friends but classmates.

If You have yet to guess, I Am pretty much a loner with only three people I consider acquaintances; Kim Barnes ,Jennifer Murray, And Kela Gregory. I have known them all since preschool and although they have never given me any reason to suspect they were only pitying me, I felt very self conscious whenever the four of Us hung out.

Kim was light skinned with shoulder length hair and had the statuesque figure of a young Dorothy Dandridge. Jennifer was tall and had skin the color of a taffy apple, with long brownish red hair that came to the middle of her back. Kela was a copper complected version of actress, Christina Milian.

However, I was plain old LaStacia Mattiese Murphy. I was thick, just not in the right places. I was also maybe the most flat chested girl in Greer, SC. At two weeks away from graduating I was still wearing an A cup bra! A cup is not a step above a training bra, No they are both one and the horrible same! My skin color was the of ripe bananas and my hair although long, was bushy and unruly. I am what my Great Grandma dubbed as 'Yellow wasted' meaning a light skinned person without good hair.

Kim, Jennifer, and Kela were quite popular but I wasn't. It made me a bitter person inside although I smiled on the surface and embraced their friendship. As I said though, a low self esteem can really fuck with a bitch's head!

Imagine going to the mall and the three of them getting approached by guys even if there were four guys to us girls; the fourth guy would sit and wait until his friends collected the numbers they had begged for and after exchanges were made, we all went our merry way as a group.

But all day long all I could contribute to the conversation was a listening ear and a fake ass impression of being interested in Kim gushing over this guy whom she had known all of ten minutes as if she is ready to shop for China patterns instead of the extras we were shopping for in preparation for the prom.

Yea, I was going but had I known then what I know now, I would have foregone that also. Unfortunately, you can't turn back the hands of time, but my girls would not give up until I consented to let Kela's date, Darion Grayson, hook me up with his cousin.

His was a guy from Wellford named John Booker, whom I had met briefly, yet no words were exchanged. I did remember that he had just won a football scholarship to University of South Carolina and would be going into his sophomore year in college though.

Kela gave Me his phone number but he wound up calling me before I even had a chance to reach out to Him. He asked to go out to the movies with Darion and Kela. I agreed even though I was nervous as hell. We had a great time! In fact, John and I became very close over the weeks leading up to the Prom and I was for the first time able to share stories with My Girls about guys.

I was even excited about picking out and matching everything to the "T" right down to letting my parents convince me to have a full makeover for my special night. With my new found look, I began to feel more confident but I noticed that neither Kim, Jen or Kela wanted me to get my hopes up too high when it came to John Booker. It was rumored he was known to be still pining for a chick He had been pursuing for some time and they didn't want me to be a rebound. But a rebound would be too much of an understatement.

To make a long story short, John and I sat at the table at Teamsters Hall both matching each other to the last thread. I had on a teal, silk, Gloria Swanson like gown with matching gloves to coordinate with the dark blue tuxedo that John was wearing. I sat beside this handsome guy, who had just boosted my ego just by being with Him.

He was quite the gentleman and although I know it was a hook up, I began to feel as if he could be my first boyfriend. However, it was just a ruse. I excused myself to go to the ladies room, leaving John with Kim, Jen, Kela and their dates. As I was about to walk towards the restroom I heard Kim talking to John about Kela owing Him, Not her but I kept walking thinking it was some inside joke between them and just brushed it off. However, when I emerged from the bathroom, I then saw John talking with Kela..

“FUCK YOU MEAN?!!! I DID YOU A SOLID!” John tried to keep his voice down.

“A Solid?? How in the hell are you doing Me a solid? This shit cost me \$250 That is called getting paid and you have so BuhBye!”

John clenched his teeth and said, “See y'all chicks ain't shit these days. We had a deal!”

Hearing this sent my ears into overtime but not ready for what was next. Although, I strutted into the restroom earlier, as if my whole night was lovely, I even felt lovely for all of sixty seconds.

“You told Me if I take your girl out and made her feel pretty and give her the perfect evening to remember because you pitied her and would hook me up with Jen fine ass!”

“Whatever! Jen don't want you and even if she did. She wouldn't dare date you now!”Kela answered

“Get the facts straight. Why you think she won't because I know that fool she with, Rodney ain't gonna do shit but dog Her out and I'm just playing my position like a shortstop!” He laughed sounding cocky as hell

“Because we don't date our friends exes!” Kela spat!

“I didn't date her friend. I went out with her as a favor! And that is all! Come on! You know I ain't feelin LaStacia like that! She cool and all but she is just basic! Not ugly enough to diss but not pretty enough to want to claim that number one spot!”

Kela looked as if She had just been slapped in her face, “Oh! So me fucking you on the low so your cousin don't find out and promising to hook you up with Jen just so you can give Stacy a memorable end to her senior year and you still want Jen?!...Fuck You John!”

John just shook his head, And walked away... I waited until Kela pulled herself together, And rejoined Darion, I however left the restroom area, Walked out of My senior prom, To the nearest phone...called a cab...went home without even alerting any of them....I went home...left My parents a note, And left town, I already had enough credits to get My diploma, which My parents picked up and had delivered to Me, At My Grandparents house....I never told My parents why I wanted to live with My Grandparents, Nor did I return any of the calls, Kim, Jen, And Kela left for Me...I was hurt by them...I knew they were not threatened by Me in any way shape or form, But fuck that sympathy friendship....It took them awhile, But they finally realized...I was not interested in communicating with them...But today I got an invitation to My ten year high school reunion, Which My Mom

mailed to Me at My Grandparents house,Along with an attachment from Kim Barnes-Kavanaugh,My old friend or should I say former friend,

Dear Stacy,

I hope this will find You in good health a great spirit,It has been a long time,But I truly miss You Stacy,So do Jen and Kela...We were so shocked when You just up and lefteven before We could walk across the stage to get our diplomas....And without so much of a good-bye...John was sick with worry,I feel responsible,I never should have tried to get You to go to the Prom,But You always seemed so withdrawn and well... Only wanted you to enjoy your youth.... But Jen,Kela,and I miss You...And would very much like to see You at the reunion,To catch up on lost time,I Am married to Ricky Kavanaugh,The same guy I attended the prom We have two children,twins actually,Jen is also married to Stavros Duncan,four kids....well if You count the two He has had with his side chick ,six....Kela and Darion dated a year until She got pregnant and tried to pass it off as Darion's,Until He had a dna test and it turns out that ...John Booker,Who began dating Jen after You Dumped His ass..But trying to pretend to do the decent thing.... He and Kela got married..if that is what You call it...Although Jen was hurt,She and Kela worked things out.And they should have because You don't let a man come between You and Your girl for life...But between You and Me...That shit is straight foul! I mean after all Kela was grimey as fuck being with John in the first place...Knowing He was with Jen....But that is their business!.Just hope to see You ,In fact would

love it if You stayed with Ricky and I that weekend,I can honestly say I would love to have Jen,Kela,and You could stay for the weekend,But they actually still live close,And even if they did..those Hoes can't be up in My house around My husband,Strutting around showing all their Mama's gave them....Nah....But You are different,You cause No worry,And this is why I miss Your friendship and your laughter....

RSVP

Kimberly Denise Barnes-Kavanaugh

I was stunned that this bitch just threw Me a helluva lot of shade,And either thought I was too simple Simon-esque to realize..But this Stacy,No longer that "basic"chick John didn't think was pretty enough to be on His arm.,No I was now the size of Mimi Faust of Love and HipHop ATL...And thanks to My late boyfriend Terence,Who after two years of dating proposed to Me,Only to be killed at Club Fairmont,A sports bar in Spartanburg SC,I was his sole beneficiary,And with his death being an unsolved homicide,I was now very comfortable financially,And My first purchase,Were these bouncy and behaving 44DD breast,Porcelain veneers,A bit of smart liposuction,I was no longer the fat,basic ,flat chested girl I was during their fake ass pity friendship days.....I was gonna go to the reunion,Maybe even stay at Kim's just as she invited Me to,After all My parents had since moved Travelers Rest,So it would be Kim's

home I would stay for the weekend,And let Her ,Jen,And Kela decide if My basic ass was no threat....But they only knew the half of it.....

Chapter2

Once a Cheater....

I was almost packed and ready to head out for My weekend class reunion ,But what gets Me is the fact I have talked to Kim,Jen,And Kela over the past week and it is obvious to Me,These Hoes think they are still superior to Me,And the proof of that came during a phone call with Kela,”So Stace...I guess You are still holding out for a hero?”She snickered into the phone.

“Actually,I was engaged up until two years ago

Kela caught me off guard cutting Me off with...” I'm sorry...Girl...I already know what You gonna say....He up and left you for a thinner,prettier woman...Men ain't shit!.. Believe Me....You don't know how lucky You are that John only saw you as the sister type...Girl that man ain't worth the I do's!”

I just shook My head,And began explaining to Her of My late boyfriend Terrence was shot in the club He managed...

“Stace!..I Am so sorry ...But there will be a man who will come along,And spend time with You,Some men these days are looking for someone as smart as loving as You..And He may not be Mr.Right,But He will be more than

glad to get that creep on!”As she laughed,I did also.Because this bitch is still thinking Her shit don't stink...But Fuck Her with a sick dick...which is probably where she gonna end up anyway with John,The way She talked shit about Him....You would have never guessed she had been fucking him with the promise of hooking Me up with Dario's cousin,John who took Me to the prom,And a futile attempt to hook John up with Jen with him all at the expense of her worn down pass around package pussy!...Sure I could have exchanged updated pics with Her over the Internet,But if She felt good tearing Me down....To build Her raggedy ass up..Then who Am I to steal her Make A Wish Foundation image...I had yet to talk with Jen,But we have been in touch via email,And although I miss Her most of all...I kept My guard up... I really wanted to be messy and reveal what Kim had revealed to Me about their “Happily Never After” asses,But I Am not that miserable of a person...But as soon as My ass hit Greer South Carolina.....Messy will be a mild understatement.....Bitches.....Lock up your men....Here comes your worst nightmare!

Chapter 3

The air was so cool and crisp as I opened the door,My 20 year old cousin Nasir was gonna stay at My apartment while I was in Greer for the weekend...I knew damn well it was gonna be an up to no good weekend for this Lil Nigga..And just as I suspected,He showed up with a random ass chick....And before the lecture began.....I knew it was gonna go in one ear and out of the other,”I don't want to walk My ass back up in here and find

My shit two blunts,A six pack and a gang of Hoes away from an orgy!”His little IP trollop acted as if She was hurt,But I mean when You jump up and decide to spend the weekend with a guy who only knows You by your nickname which is “Bodiez”And the way she was grinning like a spider monkey and extended her hand to Me and grinned with two teeth protruding over the other ones ,in gold caps”GURLLLL...How you doing...My name Fresca!”

I damn near choked....So I Am guessing Her mama has a cute little story of being Thirsty as hell when she was in labor...or just plain Thirsty!...Now I Am but nine years older than She is yet,She said” You may know Chevette?.....My Mom... She run the club down on 108th!”

Chevette?....Did this girl say Chevette! Damn You can tell what Her family wished for ,Cars,And Drinks....

But I would have been there all damn day listening to her give Me her life story as if She and Nasir were gonna jump the broom any day now...But as I said..I had to be out and on the road..... As I was getting into the car “Bodiez”ran out to My car”Stacy...leave ya numba wit Me in case I need to holla at you about anything involving the house!”

I stopped and looked at Her... Although Nas already had it ,I gave Her My number,And took hers....And shook My head at the air of confidence she had...Much like the last young lady He tried to sneak over here the last time he house sat for Me when I spent the weekend with Terrence family after his funeral....As I drove I thought back to Terrence and the up and down rollercoaster which had become our relationship,Terrence Baker and I met when We were both taking managerial courses at Gville Technical College.Terrence seemed smitten with Me from day one...But at the time I was still reeling from the self esteem problem and could not for the life of Me understand what this guy,Who was a dead ringer for the rapper,Common

saw in Me, And I found out later that He had a fetish, Yes, He as a co worker explained to Me, the type of guy who were attracted to plain looking women, And guess who fit that description... Yea.... Me, ... And although, I know He did have feelings for Me, They were limited.. He knew that He could have a much prettier, Thinner woman, But He worked his magic... And that would be the dick.... And trust He had a magic wand..... wave it at Me and I would forget about the pain and stress He put me through... Always with that same Line..... "I Ain't gonna cheat on You no more!" And He wouldn't.... At least for another month.. Then it would be the same old thing... different excuse" You know these bitches throwin pussy at Me left and right.... And Ya know I gotta get Me.... But it don't mean nothing.. I know you never had dudes chasing You and shit... So You can't really understand My situation.....!" (Yea.... Ikr..... He thinks I'm ugly, fat, But can suck a decent dick)... And always ended it with... "I Ain't gonna cheat on You no More...!" And Yes... I would take Him back, But the last time He made that , Promise... He did cheat..... And that is why I got a call at 3:33 a.m , And a knock on My door at the same time, on the phone was his homeboy Wise, At the door... The Sheriff's Department telling Me that His body had been found with six gunshot wounds, And not a suspect or witness in sight, his pants down around his ankles, And a partially full condom still covering his still erect dick... I was not even touched by the manner of which He was found..... Or Where.... I was not even shocked about the fact He had been having sex with another woman when He was killed, Nor did I care to know who the bitch was.... All I could hear in My head was His voice the last time He made that bogus promise.... I Ain't Gonna Cheat on You no more... And now He would keep that Promise.... lying cold in the grave, Just for a piece of ass.... And I Am not bitter... If I were bitter.... I would not have watched and

waited until he pounded the thot until He began to cum....I pumped six bullets into his body ,He even kept moaning as if it was the ultimate nut! Thottie Ann took off running....I had no use to shoot her....He cheated..That chick was so shook up,That she described the assailant as a short chubby man with a beard and when it was discovered She was a married woman,She pled the fifth...And skipped town....And no one was arrested....I pretended to give a fuck....Until I got that insurance money.....But one thing is true....Bet that Nigga won't cheat again.....

Present Day Greer South Carolina,2016

When I say Greer South Carolina has changed.....I bullshit You not! But it was still home...I just felt as if all the places My parents,and Grandparents once took Me to as a child were gone.....I will not fret too much...But was starving,Yet,My taste buds were set on one particular place,Lewis Drive in....I know I was ready to faint scream and cry,When I drove to that part of town,Only to find it to no longer to be there,Instead,There was a beautiful venue where it once sat....So I did what anyone raised in Greer,Would do...I set off looking for Cannon's...hoping against all hope it would still be there! I had emailed all three girls that I would text them as soon as I got into town,But I needed time to spend a bit of Me time,Plus although I accepted Kim's invitation to spend the weekend at Her house and get acquainted with and catch up with Her and the girls,But I secretly got a motel room,Due to the fact I would be staying a bit longer,As I went inside the restaurant I found

a booth,The young waitress had just taken My order,Of Chili Cheeseburger with fries ,coleslaw,and Lemonade,When A text from Kim,came thru,

Kim:Stacy....gotta run an errand,But Ricky is home,I Am dropping kids off at My parents for the weekend.

I text Her back , Thinking I would not feel as if it was respectively a good idea.

Me:Kim....I don't know???.....Just text when You get home...And I will kill time until then...

Before I hit send..She called Me.

“Girl....You good!... I trust You!” I was about to decline when I heard Ricky say in the background....”Hell yeah.... Safe as fuck,Not even horny enough for that!!”

I pretended not to hear Him,But I told Her,I would be there shortly,Smirking....See they had no Idea that I had gone from being Jennifer Hudson built to being Meagan Good statuesque..... Could not wait to see Ricky’s smug ass when He saw Me....All this did was arouse Me..... because I was in town,for the reunion....But I also wanted to get revenge ,As far as I was concerned,Kim,Jen,and Kela always beat Me in the dating game....As if I was content to be their handmaiden.....But I finished My food,Paid,And left the waitress a ten dollar tip.I got into My car and keyed in Kim’s address on GPS just to clarify if I had the right address and drove to the housing development of SunnyGlen Townhouse Community and drove up to the split level home,There was a 2016 Chrysler 300 with the plates that read”Kim's Hubby”.I shook My head in disgust....How fucking insecure Kim was,Because remembering Ricky’s self centered ass I know His ass was

not advertising Her , Especially not the Ricky I remembered,But maybe He was just trying to appease Her,As He did when We were younger,Especially after He broke her heart time and time again!

I walked up to the house,And rang the doorbell,Ricky was talking on the phone to someone as he approached the door,He spoke into phone,I overheard”Yea Man..You know ya girl is in town...That's the Boogie Bear now..!”As he got closer to the door He opened it...eyes traveling over My body,He thought I were a sales rep when I asked, If this was the Kavanaugh residence....He said”Ma’am I You have the right location,But I don't have time to talk at the moment....give Me your number and I will hit you up....

By the way...I'm Richard,But call Me Richard!”

Without Missing a beat I shook his clammy hand and said,”I’m the Boogie Bear...Call Me Stacy!.... “

His mouth flew wide open,And got so quiet....You could have heard rat pissing on cotton!...

He squinted his eyes and said”LaStacia?”

I smiled a get a load of Me smile,And flipped My \$800 lace front over My shoulder and said”One and the same!....How are You Richard,?”

“Ricky....Girl don't go Government on Me now!” He smiled sheepishly taking in My 38DD breast,As if they were in a bucket of KFC ...I pretended not to notice but heaved up a bit,so he could see the cleavage...He laughed and shook his head

“Damn Girl... Kim and Me got a set of twins..But damn I see You babysitting two of Your own....Damn...You look good as hell... Shit..If You looked like this in High School...Forget about You being odd chick out..Shidddd...I woulda been trying to fuck!”....I knew better than to find any

manners from this Nigga so I didn't even try....He at least volunteered to get My bags from the car....Which gave Me time to pair his Bluetooth to My phone,Then hit the "hide connection"app,So I could get His messages without being any the wiser...About two minutes before He came in with My traveler wheeled luggage,I had dropped My other things off at The Marriott Suites,While I was in the guest room,Ricky got a text from none other than "Book" meaning John Booker,Asshole...I waited a bit until at least five text had been exchanged

John;Nigga Whaassuuppp?!!..You over there losing your appetite hanging with spare tire?..Bet Yo ass wish Kim hurry home!

Ricky:Nigga...You don't even wanna know what is going through My head.....And not the one on My shoulders..This bitch look 100% different...

John: Nigga I know Kim being stingy wit' the pussy...But no way You gonna make Me believe anybody could make Stacy look good!

Then Ricky replied with pics He had secretly snapped of Me...

John:Nigggggggaaaaa!!! Damn,I gotta fuck that...Shidddd.....She want this dick,or will and I'm that Nigga!

Ricky:You wanna put ya money on ya dick Nigga? Matter of fact....Imma hit it first!

John:Deal Nigga.....wager?

Ricky:I hit first....Kela gotta do that threesome...I lose....You can fuck Kim....

John:Kim ain't gonna go for that shit!...She will try to commit suicide again like She did after You made Her fuck Ration,and his cousins,After you lost that Super Bowl bet!

Ricky:Man Kim is a weak ass cry baby...All I gotta do is threaten divorce....Hell that dumb bitch pregnant again too... Another keep a Nigga baby...FuckBitch Fucked My ass ,got pregnant,And now I Am not giving a fuck....Except in Stacy's pussy!

John: Yea Mothafucka...After I knock that shit down...I gots ta have it!..Later Nigga see ya tonight....

Yes,I was pissed...And flattered.....Not at their conversation,But at how they had no idea...They had Me Fucked up....And a bitch like Me....I Am not a lousy lay....I fuck back!

The Years Have been Kinder,To Some

I was sitting in the den watching TV with Ricky,I had the tempting feeling of just slitting his throat!...Kim,Jen and Kela I soon discovered that they were pitifully pathetic...Hell although I may not have been as pretty as them back

in the day,I thought they were as people say now..."That Bitch!",When really they were simply jump off turned trap a Nigga with babies.....

"So....Who is the lucky man?!" Ricky asked....He had been so engrossed in the movie short,The Male Groupie ,on HBO,Snapping back to attention I only gave him a quaint smile,"My fiance was murdered a few years back!..."

"Sorry...But I know you got a fuck buddy...or at least looking for one"His smug ass asked.

"Well...My mind is not consumed by sex....But..I'm good...I got two lovers,And they both run on Energizer batteries!"

"Dayum.....You changed in many ways....Keeping it 100!,So what type of work Yo fine ass doing?"

"My fiance left Me the club he owned after He was killed...Plus I was His Beneficiary,So I sold part of the club to Terrence's brother...We are partners in the business"

"So has He hit it?"

"No! What the fuck I look like heirloom pussy?! Hell Nah!..."

"So ,You looking forward to seeing ya old classmates?...go back down memory lane?"

"Memory Lane?...In all honesty....I don't have many good memories....I was not a happy person,Until I left town.,...!"

Before He could say anything else Kim and Her kids pulled up....She got out of the car...Loaded down with grocery bags....And Ricky did not even lift a finger to help Her,So I went outside....She hadn't seen the makeover,The minute she say Me,She went off...'REALLY RICKY? YOU GOT A BITCH IN MY HOUSE? BUT HAD TO SUCK MUCH DICK FOR STACY TO STAY THE WEEKEND?!!!

I said "Kim?....It's Me,Stacy!"

Her mouth fell open as if She was froggy goin courtin'

"Stacy?...Girl...You look so beautiful....I would have never guessed...I was expecting the chubby little girl with the pretty smile!"She sounded hella shady...

"Yes ...Ricky was blown away also!....I can go shopping with You for the reunion so I can help you pic out things Ricky would rather see You in,instead of ...now"

She looked at Me,Pitiful like... "Did He say that?!" She asked with a facial pity sound....the type of "Please don't take My man look.

"No,But He seemed to like My wardrobe...As he helped Me unpack!"

She looked puzzled,But went back to talking about My vast improvement.....But I know that look....It was the same look I wore back in the day whenever She or Jen and Kela swore to hook Me up,But then the guy

would end up with one of them, instead of Me.... But now like the song... It's Judy's turn to cry... I continued with Her, helping Her bring in Her groceries, While Ricky played 2K or whatever game He was indulged in.... He never got up once to help.... Then after it was too late to help... He jumped up with His phone and ran into the kitchen pantry and Yelled "DANG!.... I missed it... I was looking around for the mouse or ghost that he was setting out to catch... Until Kim shook Her head and said through clenched teeth.. "Girl.... He is searching for Pokemon!.. I dropped the whole carton of eggs!.... And like the broken egg whites.... I was no longer any good!!!! Lol

Gotta See It, To Believe it!

After helping Kim get everything set up for the cookout, Ricky left to return their kids to his parents house, Strangely Kim told Me that Her in laws were not home when She had taken them earlier... But that was a lie... Ricky had text Her saying

Ricky: Kim... You gotta see it to believe it!.. Ya homely friend..... Fine as Hell now!

Within twenty minutes She was back home, with Her groceries, Seeing the new Me, She acted as if She thought I was a door to door Thot Avon lady.... I really don't know how.... I never noticed how pathetic She actually was.... But.. See... I can be a bitch without being a bitch...." So Kim.... How have You been keeping Yourself?... Your face hasn't changed since High School!"

She looked at puzzled, But smiled... But truth be told I knew it was a blow to Her.... So I let it flow.

“I just want to thank You for finding the weight I lost!” I giggled...She wanted to say something but thought better of it.

I tried to lighten the mood

“Girl....I know You don't think I lost this shit,easily,..or naturally?”

“Stacy!...Girl... You know that is dangerous....Liposuction?!!!”

“Smartlipo.....It was quicker,But no walk in the park,I had so much pain...!”.....But a bitch is svelte,!”

She laughed,At that moment...But her cell phone buzzed with the ringtone”Posed 2 Be by Omarion!”..She said...”This is Jen!....Hey girl Yea....Ok...See you in twenty!”

Kim and I both decided to go shower and get ready for Jen ,Stavros(I always took him to be a terrorist looking dude),Kela and John would be arriving...And yep I really wanted to see Jen and Kela.....And not for Sentimental Reasons either.....I wanted to see their faces when they saw their old charity case was bangin’.....And according to their hubby’s they wanted to bang Me....But Desperation is a thing of the past....So as I was getting ready to take My shower,My alert text went off....Still paired to not only Ricky’s phone,But now it was a text from Ricky to Who I Am assuming to be his or one of His jump offs....Oh....like Y'all asses wouldn't read them!

Ricky:Yo....stop blowing up My damn phone Tweety?

(Hold up....Who in the hell?... Tweety?)

Tweety: Because,I don't care if ya baby mama sees them....But if that were to happen,I pity You!

Ricky: Her bff is in town for the ten year reunion!"

Tweety: Ricky stop fuckin' play with Me... What friend?

Ricky: LaStacia Murphy

Tweety : Boy Bye.... That bitch looking like Big Pun's ghost!

Ricky: Whoa.... You need to stop recycling boring jokes.. Chill with that shit!...

Tweety:, WTF,? You cheerleading for the "HEFTY HOES!

RICKY: Imma need You to chill on that shit....

Tweety: Oh hell You use to clown the bitch all the time!

Ricky: You don't know that sista like that to be shading Her..... Plus She looks great!!.... And seems not as shy!

Tweety: So! You telling Me this to say?,..."

Ricky: And I'm trying to Fuck!

Tweety: Dog Ass Nigga!!!!... ArrahJay need pampers

I shook My head.... This Finta Be Good

Wardrobe Change!

Kim

When I tell You,I Am doing a quick change in My ensemble,It was kind of a coincidence that I had picked out an Emerald green below the knee thin sweater dress that My co worker,Melinda Gentry had given Me for Christmas gift exchange....it was beautiful....But I was already wearing green,Not the kind You smoke,Crayon or the wear....Green as in with envy,Of My once plain,Bestie,Who had just shown up in Greer SC,For Our ten year class reunion,Although We have recently been contact,it had been via phone or email...She never sent pics,I guess I forgot about CinemaScope putting ten pounds on you,And Her Facebook profile pic was that of Her fiance who was shot to death a week or so before their wedding,A wedding neither,Kela,Jen,or I were invited,A and there was a privacy on Her account...I sent request,She never accepted...So I was expecting the same house mouse chick who I often tried to get dates for Her,A few guys agreed ,For a price....And that price... was sex with them,But after they got what they wanted....they reneged on the plan... Except John Booker,I slept with Him,to get Him to talk to and take Stacy to the prom,He took Her,We double dated,As Ricky was best friends with John....He took Her,it flopped,I was pissed and felt used,And As mad as I was,I felt sorry for Stacy,She left town,So I thought all casual fucking contracts had been fulfilled,But John began

blackmailing Me....Even after He ended up with Kela,I still had to fuck Him... Because He threatened to tell Ricky...And now....I Am the mother of twins,That are John's....Yes...I know "Thirsty"huh?...But I Am not gonna swap a slacker for a whoremonger!..Frankly,I Am tired of the whole thing.....Fucking John on the sly....I want Him to leave Kela and come to be with Me and our babies...Who?...Ricky?...My husband Ricky?!!!!.... Why Am I gonna hurt Him like this?!!!!....Man Fuck Ricky !....And the many STDs He gave Me....But flipped the script,He is on probation for possession of cocaine with the intent to distribute...So when I began complaining about it felt as if I were sliding down a razor blade and landed in an alcohol river....each time I took a piss!...He was quiet,popping some vitamin the man at a local health store gave to Him,For iron poor blood...He stood up and said "Yeah,Shit like that happens when You Ho yourself out to Hire....I bet not catch whatever got You and this room smelling like infection...Matter of fact...Get in the damn tub.... Take a fucking bath!"

I stepped into the tub as hot scalding water being administered by Ricky not using the cold tap at all....after ten minutes He left telling Me to get out of the tub,As He went to answer the ringing doorbell....I heard a familiar voice....John,He bellowed"Where She at Nigga....!"

His footsteps came closer,I knew He would save Me....He opened the bathroom door and just as I was smiling.....I realized...He was not there to help,Well help Himself....But Ricky...not wanting any violation of probation....And would not dare hit Me Himself,But

John did....Especially when Ricky said”This bitch burning Man....Took A day or so but My shit is burning!,been taking vitamin so thought that was the problem but it's this filthy bitch!’

John took off his thick leather belt and began whipping My wet body,making it even more unbearable ,The harder He hit Me the more shit Ricky spoke in the back ground....I realized that He was masturbating to Me getting beat By John....All of a sudden he exploded....moaning and groaning,,,before Ricky paused the beating and slapped Ricky a high five.....Ricky bent down and whispered,’I betta not catch shit from Yo nasty ass!”then spit in My face....

I whispered,”I Am the mother of Your children,How about I tell that?!”

“How about I fuck You up?!!!!.....Fuck You and them damn kids!”Then kicked Me and began screaming”Aye,Bruh ya ho just asked to suck My dick..Ratchet ass....”

My husband Ricky said”Do You Playboy....The blow job is a bit lazy tough!”

With that being said.....John shoved his massive dick in My mouth....Fucking My throat,And choking Me out at The same time....Finally releasing his cum down My throat!!!!...Ricky said “You sucking My homie Dick???? !!! Clean Ya nasty ass up....clean yaself up!”...Fucking Ho!”

He left Me alone to get Myself together..sore as hell from being beaten like a runaway slave with some fake freedom papers!Then I saw the vitamin bottle....Only it was Tetracycline,For STD for Ricky , Prescribed two weeks ago!

Damn.... thinking back....Lawdhavemercy....At first I couldn't wear the green ,Not wanting to be green with envy,Now can't wear The red dress... Because I was red with embarrassment....I was tired of being used and abused,And too ashamed to tell anyone....I always fronted as if Ricky and I were happy,Truth be told....I don't think love is for the two of us...At one time I thought so...But after eight years of marriage....All it came down to was Ricky straight pimping Me on the low...In fact that was the pattern with Him...It has made Me so very self conscious,But truth be told...I now feel something towards Stacy,That I never thought I would feel...And that is envy...And I don't know about Jen,But I do know Kela has always been a bit jealous of Me,But I knew she would definitely hate on Stacy and her now slim and beautiful self....I opened the door to step out of the room with the ensemble,I had chosen a white two piece short set,And it hung to each and every curve My body had....I was gonna be fierce... but as I stepped out of the room,Stacy was also walking out of the guest room....She had on a bright yellow silk wrap around dress,Her auburn hair was up swept chignon...with tendrils...Damn...I felt as if I were homemade sin compared to Her.....

Longtime No See

John has been gone about three hours, Talking about He met up with the guys, Got sidetracked and would be home as soon as Nigi was done with His hair. I Am kind of glad to be able to see Stacy, But she has never really come out and said anything about Me marrying John, Or never revealed to anyone why She suddenly left during senior prom night... She saw and heard a lot, between John and I the night John escorted her to the prom, See the deal was, John agreed to take Her for a price, I had to hook Him up with our girl Jen... Plus I had to give him a blowjob.... Well He demanded the latter while Stacy was freshening up, She saw us, Yet, She has no idea I knew, Neither did John or anyone else for that matter..... And although I hooked Him up with Jen after Stacy broke camp... But the relationship didn't last long.... John has always been a Ho.... and kept fucking Me on the low.... I became pregnant.... And I knew it was John's.... I Am still a bit taken aback that Jen was only upset due to the fact that we had both been on the receiving end of the same wayward dick.... But it made Me realize that all these years, My so call girls, Kim, Jen, And Stacy thought I was a tramp without a stamp.... And that they felt that I was loose and wanton, And would fuck anyone's man, Just to say I did the shit!, Yet, they always seem to or pretended to forgive Me, But I admit... I could have handled it better, Especially since, Jen and I were close as sisters, But at the time, I was pregnant, By John, Who had by then moved in with Jen more or less... whatever the situation.... the pussy He lay claim to whenever He was up in it... Mine.... Yet when I told Him I was pregnant.... He suddenly began to avoid Me, Being under Jen ass..... So one morning, I was around four months pregnant.... I woke

up....Realized I was tired of sleeping with single in a double bed,While My Baby Daddy was taking My bestie on vacations,To dinners,And was sleeping comfortable in the arms of a woman I played Cupid for....I got up,Showered,And got dressed,I had an appointment and I dared not to miss it....

I drove to the Sunnyside Apartment complex,And as suspected,John's Honda Accord was parked beside Jen's Toyota Corolla,I parked on the sidewalk,Jen,none the wiser saw Me walking and came to the door grinning"Damn!...You must have known I was making Bacon,Eggs,Hashbrowns,And pancakes!"

I laughed and said"Smells Hella good too!...But can't stay!"

1. She said" More for Me and Johnny(her nickname for him)!" before taking a bite off of a piece of bacon....I had to spill the news to Her,Before one of two things would occur....I would either lose My nerve to tell or,Or I was gonna vomit....

I asked,"Is John around?, Actually I need to talk with John..."

She said"Kee....Please don't tell Me this dog ass nigga fucking up on Me again!,Every Time He is suspected of foul shit,You and Kim always cuss him out,for hurting Me,I know Your intentions are good,but I got this...."

I cut Her off"Jen,please,I really need to speak with John,It is very important" I had not told either Kim,or Jen about My pregnancy for the fact,they would have been all in My business,But I couldn't tell them,....Ok Fuck it at the time I wasn't sure if it were By this dude I used to see ,Charles Styles,who was just a booty call or a Drake would say,"Hotline Bling"Or John....while I was

getting ready to stand up, Kim came crashing in yelling "Surprise!...Kee....where the hell you been"

At that moment they both noticed My protruding belly and began jumping up and down yelling "WE GONNA BE AUNTIES!!!!!" Then Jen said "Oh Hell Naw!...You wanna talk to John?!...That lowlife dude, Charles he hooked You up with Fucked, Knocked You up...And fucking left?!!!....Aww Naw...JOHN!...GET YA ASS UP AND GO FIND YA NO GOOD ASS FRIEND, MATTER FACT...KIM...YOU ROLLIN'?"...

Kim was all for it....at last verbally....She knew she wasn't about that life.... John came tumbling into the room, Only to hear Jen regurgitate her rant on Charles, But I knew if I didn't say what I had come to say, I would more or less lose My nerve and raise this baby on My own, Which wasn't even gonna happen, John was paid...And I was gonna be too....Jen had always gotten any man She ever wanted, Even if I wanted them, And although there were plenty....I wanted John, Always had, But to Him, was not the girl You marry, No, I was the girl to fuck and suck, when My bestie, Whom he wanted didn't feel in the mood to do it.

John looked at Me...."I don't know where Charles at...You the one who fucked Him!...Shiddd....or any of them other niggasSo why You here?....Ain't nobody testifying on yo behalf for child support, Niggas know how you get down!', and He snickered..

Jen said "You know You didn't need to go there Bae, She don't need to have that in her face!"

"And I don't need Her, in My face....blowing up My phone...being a dick hound and sweating My boys!....Damn.....!"

By now I was mad...And I caught Jen's little shade,about not needing it in My face...meaning,at least in My opinion....She was agreeing to everything He had just said,Just that She wish it had not been said to My face....Kim sat at the table as if that burnt bacon was so good that She couldn't be bothered by her surroundings....This confirmed to Me that Kim was a punk...And felt the same way as Jen did...Ya know what? Fuck all this and Fuck them too

“John....I called and text.....or as You say,Blew your phone up... Because I was trying to reach My Baby Daddy!.....Search is over Nigga!.... Just know ya ass gonna take care of OUR baby....And Ya ass gonna do it beneath the same roof!...So go on and tell Jen the fucking truth.....Tell the bitch how I have been fucking You since the spring of our senior year in high school!”

It was a quiet thickness in the air...Like tunnel vision,So I kept talking...threw a few lines in....a t least now I had their attention.....Tell Jen how I had to keep You supplied with pussy payments,So You wouldn't break up with Her ass!!!!,And truth be told....Jen You owe Me too....I had to fuck this big dick Nigga on the regular!”

John walked towards Jen,Who was now crying,And Kim tells Me to get out!

“OH,I Am...And just remember this....I skipped a grade...which is how I graduated with You two,You are both 18,I just turned 17....I am four months pregnant by ...Your man Jen,Who is 23....So he knocked Me up at age 16....So yea...Here comes the bride BITCHES!//

Long story short,John David Booker,may have had a great job in Construction,In fact His family owned JD Booker Construction and

Landscaping in both Greer and Boiling Springs...And with his uppity mom..She would rather John did the right thing by the other of his child,Before My Dad and brothers did the wrong thing by Him,And beat him from his ass to his appetite!

Speak of the devil...John just drove up...I gathered My purse,And went to get into the car with Him...I was expecting a bunch of lowdown Stacy jokes...But He was talking about everything else,As if He was holding a surprise back or something....Jen and I had been talking earlier that day,And she did mention Kim saying Stacy looked great...But Kim will say anything to avoid confrontation...I wasn't buying it..If Stacy had looked so great....Why were there no pics of Her on Facebook?.....

Forgive....But don't forget a damn thing

Stavros and I had just dropped the kids off with his sister,Amaghlia,She was one of the sweetest people I know,She was 18 years older than Stavros,But their parents died in an automobile accident When Stavros was ten,She was a newlywed,And both She and her husband were there for him,nurturing,sending him to school.. Although Stavros is her brother,Our children refer to both Her,And her husband,Jared as MeMaw and PePaw....as if they were their grandparents,They themselves had no children of their own,Stavros also has a younger sister,Tjuana,Who actually lived with Stavros,the children and Me,She has lived with us since she graduated from Spartanburg Methodist College...Sweet girl,But She held a college

degree.....Not a street degree meaning a man could tell Her that He was a serial killer....And her panties would get wet,Then....A sore back and yeast infection later...She decides,I should have listened...Nah....I have had to cover for Tjuana with Amaghlia,Jared,And Ros(my pet name for Stavros),just like this morning when I heard her vomiting....This was the third time in a week so as much as she wants to play dumb..,I know the deal...been thereon both ends...But at least I knew this situation would be way different than the one with Kela ,I still remember it as if it were Yesterday,When one of My three best friends dropped the news that She was pregnant,By My boyfriend,And what does He do????....He climbs straight up out of My bed,into their marital bed...And Kela is the one who hooked us up...He tried to reason with Me....He was only marrying her to skip jail time for impregnating a minor,She was 17 when they married,But was 16 at the time she conceived,Asking Me to be patient,And like a fool I was still letting him fuck,Truth be told,I let John move in with Me during the time We dated,But it was due to the fact,His parents kicked him out,John was not abiding by what they thought were decent rules,Even when they caught him sneaking bitches in after hours,I let Him move in and on Me,Because ,John David Booker,III does not believe in paying bills,And from the way things look,He had not remedied that ailment since marrying Kee....And had it not been for the monthly stipend from the company,assisted by Kela's job as his dad's secretary (And jump off)they would be on that Paula Jai Parker/Forrest Martin shit....Yes,Kela and I are still friends,I realized,Hell....S he did Me a favor,Although She could have hoed with anyone else,She chose John,And had I let that make Me bitter,I would not be any better than She was,But I Am better,I always have been,I forgave Her,But didn't forget,However,Ros came along,And I have never looked back,But I do not trust Kee....Never have,But I love the bitch ...She has been in My life way before Elementary

school,Just like Kim and Stacy,I Am glad Stacy decided to reunite with us this weekend,It has been ten years....And until recently we had been out of touch,I have not seen as much of a picture of her on either of her social network account,I knew that Ros,had yet to meet Her,And he never laughed whenever,Ricky,Kim,Kee,and John had our couples get together,So all He knew was that She was unattractive in Ricky and John's eyes,And weighed more than they cared for,So I know that when He sees her,He will know how not to let on that He does not like her looks or weight....I just hope Ricky or John have enough sense to not pick on the poor girl before the class reunion,She has always been sensitive,All through high school She only had one date And that was when John took her to the prom,Only if Kee would hook him up with Me afterwards,And yea. I'm guessing pussy payments.....Shit must have been whack....Because,John refused to continue the date with Stacy....I just hope My girl at least gets a dance tomorrow night..... Hope Kee's pussy pays the bill....

On that Jackson 5 shit:I want You back

I knew Kim was feeling inferior to Me ,and has been for the past three hours,that She and I had spent together,I knew I was looking like a young,Jasmine Guy with My newly purchased lace front wig,with just a few tendrils falling just below My chin,My entire face was beat with Fashion Fair cosmetics,My choice for smart lipo and breast augmentation came in quite handy,And the raw silk butter

yellow wrap around dress,clung to and plunged low in the cleavage,And My ass,accentuated by a pair of booty padded panties....I was a brickhouse!,Diva,All around bad ass bitch.....I just hope I could hold it together,There has not been a day to pass that I didn't think about My murderous secret,But I still have yet to feel any guilt....Terrence knew that I had low self esteem,And had trust issues,But He chose to be sneaky....So I did what I had to do....There were no other witness except the Hoe He was with,And I was disguised so well...All She could tell the police was that it was a short stocky dude,....And that was half the damn city,And being that Terrence was a drug dealer....popo stopped searching and charged it to the game....And not only did He split his inheritance between His Mom and Me,We both received \$25,000 each,Plus I secretly got to keep the extra \$50,000 in our wall safe....But although,it was a closed case,I never turned a blind eye,Because I had to be one step ahead of the game... I heard Kim,downstairs,trying to whisper to Ricky....failing at it miserably”What took You so long Ricky?...You know damn well We are expecting company...And that Stacy is here,And You are disappearing and shit...You want people to think We are having problems?”

“Kim...What you bitching about how,?...I had to handle something right quick!”

“Whatever Ricky! And please....Don’t get drunk and start acting ignorant and flirty!...”

“You just think I'm gonna be checking your attitude,And whip your ass when they leave...You know damn well,You can't go to the reunion fucked up...So You fuck up and get slick out ya mouth....I will save that ass whipping for later....”

“Yea,Guess the I fell lie is played huh,?!”

“Naw....Just not a dude for witnesses,Stacy don't need to know I have to beat the Hoe out of You every now and then!.....Shit...then She may not let a Nigga fuck!!!.....”

I wanted to go and fuck him up on the spot,But Kim began talking”You actually gonna say that shit to Me?...You weren't trying to fuck her back in the day...Plus... My self esteem will never be low enough to be jealous of or hate on My Girls....”

Ricky laughed and replied”Well you should,Because the pity project has flipped the script on You other three Hoes....Shit....I feel it is only fair....Don't I let You suck and Fuck My boy John from time to time....Half the time....I don't charge his ass....Kee would not like that....!”

I pretended to have My headphones on,And entered the room,Acting surprised to run into them in the kitchen,At the time I entered,A car pulled up,Kim smiled grabbed Me by the hand...”Kee and John are here!”Kim was looking cute in a two piece white skort ensemble,Kee and John got out of the car...Kee had on some denim Daisy Duke shorts,And a hot pink bebe T-shirt,She was cute,but like Kim,She too had nothing on Me....Kee stared at Me...then put on the fake act and hug”STACYYYYYY....GIRRRRL.....You look waaayyy different....!”

John,I knew had gotten pics from Ricky ass knew how much I had changed,But He just straight stared...Kee asked”Stacy,You remember John,Your prom date...?”

I smiled,But John spoke....Naw....I'm not tripping...but you got Me on some Jackson 5 I want You back shit!"

Kim,Ricky,And Kee stood speechless..I just shook My head at the retort,And Just to fuck with Kee,I said"Wow... great seeing You and hugged him,He had on the whole damn bottle of Burberry Cologne...And Out of nowhere My panties were soaked and wet!.....It was a turn on just knowing these Hoes see,I Am coming out!

Like Marvin Gaye..I wanna know What's Going on!

Ros and I had to detour to get Tijuana who at the last minute decided She wanted to go to Kim's with us,She came out of the house in a turquoise tennis outfit by Nike,She wore matching hat,and turquoise Air Max sneakers,I wonder if anyone else can spot the outline of the waist trimmer,holding on like hell to hide that baby bump,I was too busy trying to picture Stacy....I always disliked Her low self esteem and judging the way she ignored My friend request on Facebook,But would email Me,ignoring request for pics,So I Am preparing Myself in case this bitch is a lighter complexion version of Precious...At least I knew I wouldn't have to worry about Ros,But I knew Ricky and John rude asses would be getting all slick...I Am very glad Stacy decided to come for the weekend,Other than Her pity party...When loosened up,She was actually quite fun,I remember how Kim had a sleepover When we were Juniors in High School,Kim,Kee,And Myself had planned to sneak out to a party after Her parents,went to sleep...of Course Stacy wanted no part of it,Which didn't surprise us one bit,But pissed

Kee off and She as much as said so”Stacy Who fucked You last night without feeding You beforehand?!”

Kim was livid”Nah Kee how You gonna throw that dagger at sista!”

Stacy just stood with tears beginning to pool in her eyes,Yet she remained calm,As Kee kept talking”Shush Kim!...She knows I love Her....But the bitch wouldn't know a good time if it fell on her face and wiggled....

Bitch would mistake it for a gummy bear!”

Stacy,Just collected her bath necessities,And headed to take a bath,Kim’s parents had already drifted on to sleep thanks to the Sleepinal® powder Kim laced their wine with When Her parents asked her to pour and bring them two glasses of White Zinfandel...she gutted the capsules to get to the quick dissolving,in liquid,she put two in each glass,And four in the entire bottle....She knew the exact dosage,And knew it would only conk them out...And since it was established that Stacy was gonna stay behind,Putting us a bigger risk,Yet We just left while She was taking a bath....We were halfway to Jerquez Young’s party,When Kee stopped to talk to and flirt with a guy named Rijaye,He was the brother of her boyfriend at the time,Derion All of a Sudden We heard tires Squealing....Looking towards the ruckus,We saw Kim’s mother car testing around the corner,Mad as hell,Kee said”I knew Stacy ass was gonna snitch us out!...Damn just because She ain't on a first name basis with dick don't mean She gotta fuck up My swerve!”

We ran trying to hide but when we dove onto the neighbor's lawn,So did Mrs.Barnes car...the faster We ran...the faster She drove,When We did a circle on her,She threw the car in reverse,And was hauling ass before Kim,Kee and got tired,And had to surrender....As the driver side door came open,Kim was bracing herself for Embarrassment and an ass whipping,When all of a sudden out comes a grinning Stacy,Laughing Her ass off...The three of us were so taken aback that we damn near pissed our pants from laughing

so hard....But We managed to pile into the car,Allowing,Kim to drive,because She had her Driver's License and it was Her mom's car...

Kee said"Stacy when I tell You,I thought yo ass had snitched....Had us about to assume the position because Mrs. Barnes would have Whipped all our asses!"

Kim laughed and confirmed,"Marlene Williams -Barnes does not care whose ass she beats!"

We were pulling up in Ricky and Kim's yard....I hoped Kim held Her liquor tonight,Usually Ricky uses this as his excuse for an after party beatdown,And Kim had already told Me that He was pissed about Stacy being there,But I was hoping that Stacy's presence would keep Him from putting his hands on Kim....As We got out of the car,everyone,Including a drop dead gorgeous Stacy.....I grasped My husband's hand,even tighter!

The Men All Pause

Jen ran her ass over to Me like Nettie ran to Believe,And like that Oscar winning scene...it was fake,She introduced Me to Her lapdog of a Husho stood behind Him looking like a Kim Kardashian/Alexandria Stevens(Flash in the pan tennis sensation,illegitimate child of Julius(Dr.J)Irving..She looked Me over and walked up to Me and gave Me a high five"Yeah....That's How You stunt on them Hoes!,All I heard was How fat you were,And How much fatter You must have gotten!....Girl....That's how You stunt on them Hoes!...."

Jen broke into the conversation after being sprayed like a can of Lysol"Stacy this is Ros's sister,Hence My sister in law,Tjuana!"

//. L. L.

Tijuana reached down and picked up a glass of wine, Handed one to Me, and picking up two more for Herself and Jen, as We toasted. I took a bigger gulp of wine than I wanted to when I said "Nice to meet You Tijuana, and extended My hand, Yet she was looking over My shoulder at Kim and Ricky, Ricky saw Her and looked as if He had seen a ghost, I looked back at Tijuana, who never stopped gazing over My shoulder and Said "Call Me Tweety!.....I damn near choked...Lawd have mercy...these hoes ain't loyal.

I noticed Kim and Kee walking over to Jen, Tweety, And Me...Kee had a twisted look on Her face, Kee hugged Jen, As Did Kim, Jen began introducing Her sister in law, Kee looked at Tweety, Nodded, and grabbed My Arm saying "Stace.. let Me borrow You for a minute...need You to go over our little agenda for the reunion..Excuse Us...good seeing You again...Tricky.....I mean Tweety!"

Tweety gritted Her teeth...And said same Here but smiled and said "Likewise...And Stacy...Get with Me in a bit... We gotta share our book apps, Jen said You are an unlimited member also?"

I agreed, It was only then I realized that she spoke with an accent, But it wasn't an accent that made Me believe for one minute She even read the label on the girdle, which outline I could see, Struggling to hide that baby bump.....And it was not helping, And Kee still had hold of My Arm, Saying "Yea Yea, go watch Netflix and chill!

I Am guessing that Kee knows something about Tweety and Ricky..that Jen, And Ricky's wife Kim, that they didn't know...So as I Am now at a standstill, I Am waiting for Kee messy ass to tell Me all about Ricky and Tweety...But she said "If Jen knew the ratchet shit Her sister in law was trying to pull

..She would not have brought Her....And anybody can see the bitch pregnant..Being all quiet about the dick she rode to get child support,But the Ho been texting John about that bastard She is carrying?...This bitch has tried it , Showing up here...!

My mouth dropped open....Tweety is Scanratch....scandal and ratchet together...But I managed to calm Kee down,And she agreed to go out of Her way to avoid Tweety and not ruin the party that Kim had worked so hard on(Kee words,I was like a virgin...I didn't give a FUCK!),Kee as I said went out of Her way to stay distant,I on the other hand made it My duty to stay as close to the shiesty ho bitch...Fucking and playing the recipient of childcare and playing Eenie,Meenie,Miney,I don't know for a come up...Ratchet as hell...But I was gonna use this to My shady advantage!

Far as I Am concerned....Party Ova!

I Am pissed as Hell!!!!.....All these years,I never knew Tijuana/Tweety was Stavros's younger sister...Seeing this hoe took Me back to a few weeks ago when John came home,with My in laws behind Him,When John came in His head was hanging down,I damn near panicked,Thought something Had happened to one our kids,Quad,and TeNaris,who were spending the week with Kim's children,But the sigh of relief escaped before I could digest the facts He dropped on Me ,And then stood behind His Mom who was in all sincerity was disgusted with Her son and tales of His wayward dick,Who had just called Me twelve bitches and fifteen Hoes since He left for the construction site,But now Here He was telling Me,that somehow other,than Me was having his baby!.....But not to worry ...Mommie Dearest and Her

tricking ass husband had paid Tijuana Duncan \$5000 to have an abortion and relocate.....And all was supposed to be good....Hell Naw....But the look John Sr's face let Me know that I should just take it with a grain of salt, Trust I had a lot of grimey shit under wraps Myself, For instance I have been fucking My husband's dad on the low, pretty much since He bullied John into marrying Me....John's ass would have been with Jen over Me, Any day....But as a minor, when I got pregnant My family, would have taken the whole damn Booker Construction down to its knees, And although I feel very superior over Tweety, But when John's Mom, first heard that I was great with child...She offered Me the same amount of money, to do the same thing, And knowing I was friendless at the moment, due to Jen and Kim, branding Me, I actually considered itBut after a long talk with My father in law to be, changed My mind..Or at least the \$10.000 he paid Me to stay, And be his mistress, And that I did....So truth be told....I wanna ask this bitch where the fuck and what rock She slid from....And had this not been a gathering given by one of My friends...I would have gone straight stupid...But Jen had no idea, And I Am sure, neither did Ros, Somehow though, Stacy seemed shocked...not at what I had said, But something told Me that whatever She thought was gonna say would be a bit different of the version I had told Her, And trust was gonna find out... Especially since after I told Her, what this hoe did...., Now Stacy is over by the patio talking to this fake ass Cleo Blactra looking homewrecker..I also notice, looks of secrecy being exchanged between Ricky and John....Y'all know that shiesty to shiestier nigga look....c confirming these two niggas were tight and often held each other up in their shit....So yea....My Husband Ain't shit.....But I Am not gonna let this shit die...I was gonna put it on the back burner for now...But the more Stacy giggled with that bitch...And John totally ignoring everything else but the new swing in Stacy's nuevo pretty ass.....Yea....I Am happy to witness

her newfound glamour....And yea...she was working the yard....But I chuckled to Myself...Hell....let Her enjoy it....because unlike Myself,Stacy has not been pretty Her whole life!

Where Tha Likkah at?

This waist nipper has Me highly agitated now....I was so fucking hungry....But....I will pass due to the fact,is would be too tight around My belly,And second....Kim ass keep giving Me the once over,And all I see are barbeque....Nah....this chick was born and raised in Greer,And they all know the no barbecue clause,None of that ALI/FOREMAN BOOM MY AYE for Me,Maybe She is to giving Her girl Stacy the once over....Due to both Ricky and John staring our way....It was then and there where I decided to see how much of a friend Stacy was to these chicks,Who laughed at her over the past years,So I asked,"You wanna come out and chill at Downtown Greenville ,later?"

She replied,Sorry gotta bond with My Girls tonight...Raincheck?"

"Cool..... Kim,May I use your restroom before I leave? Kim acted hesitant...."Sure two doors down,to the left!"

I thanked Her,And then went inside,Running smack dab into both John and Ricky,Who both yanked Me ... the bathroom...,"You ratchet ass bitch....How You gonna get outta pocket all the fucking time??...,As a matter of fact get down on ya knees and suck Ricky

dick while I take that ass....before I could say or do anything,Someone came down the hall but,Swiftly turned to leave,knocking stuff over,I don't know Who,Or what....But,John slipped out of the bathroom,Yet,He saw no one...But I know it was not either Kela or Kim... Because I know the shit

would have hit the fan...But whatever the situation,I used it to My advantage,straightening Myself up I walked onto the patio,And Stacy was standing there,"I was just coming to check on You"

I was a bit relieved,But kept it together..."Thanks..Girl...I think this house is haunted...."

She laughed and said"Well damn....Guess Your past is coming back to haunt You,..John was walking out the door at the same time..."

"Excuse Me,?...John....."

"Yea,Kee told Me,the situation..."

"Oh...it was a false alarm....But don't want to even go into detail...!"

Stacy looked at Me... Somehow I trusted Her sincerity.. Because in My opinion,She had been hanging with Me more than the three besties,she claimed.We joined Jen,Kela and Kim,Who obviously had been talking about either one or both of us...Kela asked"Where y'all two before and after pics been?!"

I looked at Her,And gave her a quizzical look,She just shook Her head,"And said....I finally realized where all the weight You lost wound up....In Tweety's belly....Girl..That waist nipper Ain't getting it!"

Jen spoke up..."Kee.....,I'm gonna need You to stop!"

Kee replied" I'm just saying Stacy looks like She donated Her fat to this chick....Tweety My ass....Big Bird is more like it!"

Stacy was standing there biting Her tongue....But after a moment,John came over and said"You owe Me a dance,from ten years ago!"

Stacy said"NAHHHH...You have already been paid....Remember?...Kee fixed You up with Jen,And hit you off with a dick suck, And fuck!,So....I would say paid in full!"

It got so quiet,You could hear a mouse pissing on cotton....Kela was pissed,Kim and Jen were shocked..So was I,I had no idea John had been with

Jen years before Kela fucked, got pregnant and married Him...TRIFLING!...Stacy began to walk off, When John with no shame to His game boldly asked “Aye Stacy...., Can I go ?”

Stacy rolled Her eyes, Put that swing into Her ass....And walked straight past His disrespectful ass...But That's what Kee gets...Dammit it's funny

If You Gonna Come for Me...Trust...I Got snaps on the petrol!

John kept walking behind Me, As Kela ran up behind Him, But for all the wrong reasons, This bitch was shouting at Me!

“Oh so you get fat sucked outta Ya ass....Ya wanna come back stuntin on ya friends, And swing ya ass in our husbands faces!...”

I turned around....And pushed John to the side....Yea....I may be wrong....But truth be told....I don't like this bitch any more than I did when She slurped John's dick down, So I was gonna cuss Her the fuck out....Then, Yea....I Am gonna fuck John like He has never been fucked before...”Kela....Back what Ya Mammy called the fuck out, Stupid dumb bitch....This Motherfucker married Yo getting knocked up for a check fuck boy!, Family rich as shit, But You gotta work at the Construction Company ***His*** family owns!”

Now John pipes in”OH...So You trying to say I Aint shit, Stacy?”

“I could care less...What You are....But ***I*** never said You wasn't shit!...Ya wife said Ya ass Ain't shit!”

He now turned around to look at Kela, He shook His head....Stepped outta the way....And gave Me nothing but space and opportunity, But Kee, Although trying to buck up, But knew better....She said”Ya know

what?!...Not even mad at You Stacy...You go on and work the runway....You deserve Ya ten minutes of fame,After all You have been in Kim,Mine,and Jen's shadow so long...You never got ya chance to shine!"This bitch has tried it....I mean truly...She extended Her hand,I shook it....But the only thing I was accepting was the fact,That I would soon take away the only thing she had... literally.....She whispered,"I apologize...."I whispered"No apologies needed!"...But in My mind,No apologies were needed...Until after...I take this bitch's man! And trust it has nothing to do with The nigga being fine....It was deeper than that....I didn't want Him ..at least not for life....I had not forgotten or forgave Him,But Trust My prom night still haunted Me...Haunted Me enough,To tell these Bitches Bye....But not before,Slipping John the number to a burner phone,Yeah...Time to let these hoes celebrate without Me...Because at first...This was just some old look at Me shit....But now...It was get back time...As I walked into Kim's house to get My shit...They all stayed behind...Giving Me enough time,to slide Tweety's purse into My bag....I said I was on some vengeance shit....But had no intentions of taking the jail time for it...Kim was coming through the door.."Stacy! Why You leaving? You know how Kee is!"

"Naw Kim...How is She?...See I have been ghost ten years....So I'm not hip to the Pass around Pussy mentality..I.Am up and out...Been real...

But I don't do kiddie shit!...I wish You well Kim,And hate to leave You here with Ricky...At least My presence would have prevented the ass whipping I hear He gives You on the regular!"

Kim went pale

.."What!???....Ricky does not.....!"

I cut Her off"Hunni....I heard it all before...Betta get Kee to pop that coochie....Or that ass whipping is gonna get served!"

I walked to My rental car and ten minutes after I drove away.....John text the burner phone number I gave Him,But I never replied....Instead,I decided to stop by Verizon Wireless,to apply for another phone,They never even asked for My Driver's License, The only asked for My \$150.00 deposit,And name..."Tjuana Duncan" I said with that covered,I drove back to My hotel,Checked out,Drove to another location,And rented a room there under Tweety's name also.....Amazed at how easy that had been,I showered and went to bed... prepared to start making John pay....And Kela miserable! But first I had to handle Tweety,I had to pretend to be this bitch's friend.....At least for the remainder of the weekend,Told Her I was leaving Sunday night,And since the class reunion I walked out on gives Me free time... And we were gonna go clubbing!...She was a damn fool in more ways than one...And I was using this shit to the hilt.....I was gonna get everything I came to Greer to accomplish,And running up on Tijuana/Tweety was indeed a perk.....Plus the ho runs Her mouth like shit runs through a goose,And I knew exactly.....What I had planned,And John..Hmmm.....Yea...He was gonna get it...In more ways than one.....

Keep Your Frenemy....At arms length

Jen was very quiet on the way from Kim and Ricky's and I knew it had everything to do with Stacy grabbing the spotlight,My Brother Ros,Loves Jen,and trust,Even I would be shocked if He ever stepped out on Her,But today for the first time...I saw it...Jen may love Ros....But she is still carrying the torch for John...But that was a no go....John was still gonna be My man... Because He knew...I was loyal to Him..Even after the abortion,He kept sneaking to see Me,I proved My loyalty to Him again....four months ago,By

having a threesome with Him and Ricky,And I ended up pregnant again....I don't know whose this one is....But John gave Me \$2.000 to tell Ricky He is the father....And I did...But the way they both tried to rape Me,inside at Ricky's house while the cookout was going on....Showed proof that I was just a pass around chick....No more,No less...I had nothing against Kim,and other than the times she showed up at Jen's house straight from an ass whipping from Ricky....I barely knew Her,I also knew that She had many skeletons in Her closet too.....Ricky and John were both dog ass niggas,And Kim was fucking John too at one point and time.....And Yea...Jen knew...truth be told,My brother does not want Jen around Kim and Kela,And I knew the reason...Yea...they thought Ros was gonna share pussy with them...But Ros,Was not even trying to hear that Shit....As a matter of fact,Jen has often talked shit behind Kim and Kee's backs,As much as the three of them dogged Stacy's days with them,I felt Stacy was real....She cussed and left the party,Not even giving a parting speech....She just as much told Kee she wasn't shit....But that's what She had the right to do..But I could care less....All I know is that when she left....John's eyes were glued to Her Ass....And yea... I knew I had to hang with this chick until Sunday.....That was the only way I could be sure....She won't be riding John's dick....That shit is mine!

1. Although His blatant disrespect was gonna need to change,Or I would make sure His marital status changed...And trust I better not find out Stacy was gonna try to fuck because She can get it too!..But since He is crying to Me about being tied up due to Kee's class reunion this weekend,Which is His way of saying", Don't call Me... I will call You!"And the only saving grace in that is ,He won't be trying to fuck Stacy... Plus She will be leaving soon,This bitch is really intimidating,So I was gonna bff Her temporary assurance,As

to this is purely,Playing the role...I may come across as the little girl who lost her parents at a Young age,But truth be told....I was so young when it happened that I don't recall the details,Just that I was heartbroken....My memories of them are a bit faded,But What I do remember of them is that they were the best parents ever...But losing them made My older siblings treat Me as if I could do no wrong...Shiiiiiddd! I then became aware that Anything I did wrong,They credited it to the loss of My parents..So I used it to My advantage every chance I got....And that was the best caper ever!!!!....Until I discovered something better.....The power of the pussy!....And up until I met John it had never failed,But John was a different kind of dude.I often wondered with His family being the owners of two construction companies,Why was it that John never seemed to be involved or even work for the company...His Wife,Kela worked for the company,His family owned,As secretary...But it seemed John's presence was never required to attend meetings,Or have any input at all...Sure He always had a knot of cash,or quick to get "pocket change"from ATM,yet quick glances at receipts always had ***LaKeland(Kela)Booker*** printed on them....But I could care less that He was spending Her hard earned money on Me...And Yes...I was gonna eat very well off that plate..for two....But the first mistake I made was getting sprung on his Dog ass,But when I realized,.I was pregnant with his baby....Cash made the coochie go woo woo....I !knew He was gonna be shocked,And at first become a bit upset....But He would get over it..After the shock wore off....Not even....He bitched,moaned and confessed that Although His Dad's company was going well,But He was in no position to help Me financially with anything...Claiming to have only\$300 to His name!

.....That was all I needed to hear....the next day,I caught a cab to the place,I needed to be,And with My own money,paid for an abortion...Avoided John's broke ass....until....I saw an article in The Greer Citizen showcasing local businesses,Announcing a stock market merger,John Booker,Sr ,had given equal shares of money to each grandchild He had... including John and Kee's....I was livid....So yea....Even though I had already paid for the abortion,I still had My documents from the OB/GYN and used them to My advantage...Called uppity ass Mammy....Who was disgusted with Her whorish son...Agreed to give Me money to handle it....I Am now pregnant again....But this time....I got the upper hand....And if I play it the way I intend to....It will be Welcome to the Empire!

Greer High School Class of 2006
"That Sting!"

I tried My best to conceal the bruises Ricky gave Me last night after the ruined cookout,The dress I wore to the reunion was a beautiful sheer long sleeved Navy blue dress leading to a silk bodice which flowed just beneath the knees,It was a Vera Wang which I had borrowed from Ricky's mother,Who reluctantly lent it to Me...But not before making Me sit through a long lecture,Basically referring to why She never wanted Me with Her son,

"Kim....I'm gonna let You borrow this dress,after all.You bought it for My birthday,And the Antique pearl and blue diamond set My parents gave Me when I married Your father in law,Because They set it off good,And no one

will know that you look totally opposite of the life You really live with My son!"

I looked at Her, jumped up from seat,And asked..."Why is it that You always try to hide the fact that You think Ricky is too good for Me?....You make it crystal clear that I Am not the woman for Him...It is one thing to not like Me,But another to keep disrespecting Me.....!"

She cut Me off mid sentence"Sit Your ass back down and shut up...You gonna listen to E.V.E.R.Y word I say!!!

Talking about disrespecting You....Shit!!!!...You disrespect Ya damn self!.... Naw That shit about You not being the woman for Ricky....You got it twistedRicky is *MY son*...So let Me say I was His Mama before You found a vacant ovary....I know him from His ass to His appetite!....***He is not the man for You!!***...How You gonna stay with a man who beats and pimps yo ass out?!!!"

I was speechless"Whhhatt are you saying?....Ricky does not.....!

She yelled"Stop lying! roll up Your sleeve?!....."

"Mrs.K....I am not gonna go there.....!"

She lunged towards Me,And pushed Me back onto the sofa,And yanked My shirt over My head and gasped

"Kim.....Noooooooooooo!.....Ricky,Fucking did this?"...What the fuck Kim?!"

I felt like a little girl,All I could do was say,"Because He loves Me!"

She shook Me,"No.....You ***love Him***.....and if you don't leave his ass....before He loves You to death!...Son or not.. No man does this!"

"I will leave if it doesn't change...."

She shook Her head,tears streaming down Her face....But ready to beat Ricky's ass like back in the day,Handed Me the dress and jewelry,Hoping

like Hell that she wouldn't get in touch with Ricky without telling Me that She was gonna do it..Truth be told,Ricky never gave any of the ass beatings,He called John over to do it,Ricky was already on the record for beating My ass a few times,So truth be told...Ricky never hit Me again after catching that charge,But what I wanna know is how did. Mrs.K know???? But like Scarlett O'Hara said....Can't think about that now!!!....I pulled into the parking space of Dollar Tree ,grabbed My phone to text John....

Me:"We gotta talk!"

Ten minutes later He replied"Yea and what I said is ***Fuck You!!!***"...Kim stop fucking texting Me..Thot ass bitch!... That's Why Ya man let Me bat ya ass....And He watched!"

Me:Why you tripping on Me?!.....Bet if I wanted to fuck You wouldn't complain!

John:Yes I would because ya head and pussy game weak!

Me: John,Don't try to make Me feel any worse than You already have,!....But this shit getting old and accept Your obligation to Me....And Our children!

John:Nah,no parts of that...So take it somewhere else...I heard Ya babies are bastards,May not be Ricky's but still a Kavanaugh,.....Daddy in law likes separating the boys from the men!

Now I'm mad....He tried it...time to knock Him to his ego's ass....I text back,

Me:Naw.John.....that would be more like Kee and Your dad situation....Hoe can't even type...So she gotta be fucking....Or should I say ***Dick-tating!***

John;I don't give a fuck,!

And the sad part is?...He wasn't lying...He really didn't give a fuck!

But I had to focus on getting ready for the reunion,I knew the dress would cover a multitude of sins....My mind was also on Stacy...She just up and left...After how I begged Ricky to let Her stay,Even after He saw how fine she had paid to become,He had John beat My ass because the Hoe left before He could even try to get the pussy....But it is best that She left,Because I did not like the arrogance She now had....I drove up just in time to meet Ricky pulling into the parking lot....He looked Me up and down....He said nothing,But I knew what that was about....And it wasn't gonna be pretty,I followed behind Him,Only to catch a quick turn,And a body slam,So hard it broke the end table....

“What the fuck is this You sorry excuse of a thot?!!!!!”

“You got Me fired with that fucking mass email you sent to ya bitch ass ho friends..Pics of yo ass with bruises,Then My own Mom threatening Me with the cops!”

“Ricky ,I never would do anything like that....”

“GET THE FUCK OUTTA MY FACE!...DEAD THAT REUNION SHIT TOO...I GOT SUM PUSSY I GOTTA CLIMB INTO!”

“Ricky....P lease I would never do that.....!”

“...Sorry.....But that reunion is out....You are not going!,Try it and fucking see what goes down!”

“I never did that....And I Am grown...And I Am your wife!,Not Your child!”

He ran up on Me and before He could pounce, John knocked on door....I was frozen....Embracing for an ass whipping, But they were out of the room like twenty minutes, When John opened the front door and yelled outside, "Come on guys...it's still a go....Three of the biggest well muscled men I had ever seen.....Before I could gather Myself, One of them picked Me up....and carried Me into our guest room...He pulled out His eggplant sized dick, Yanked My hair until My mouth opened ,He began grinding in My mouth, thrusting harder, then without warning, He stopped a slammed it straight into My seeming torn pussy and began raping Me, The other guys had now entered the room....I sucked ,fucked and all manner of shit....Ricky and John on the sideline, dicks visibility hard....All of a sudden Ricky orders silence...As I look at the screen the video app appears....LOCAL GOOD GIRL GONE THOT...WATCH OUT NIKKO AND MIMI...It is the video of auto camera, Capturing the whole thing...Ricky laughed and said "Guess I can either get paid....Or a divorce....Maybe let Pornhub...finance My goals, already got the production....Yo choo choo train run through pussy....The word today is,"DIVORCE"

I just cried Myself to sleep....I Am now a woman scorned...Still missed the reunion though!"

Something came up....

This morning I had My plan in order first, I called Basic, And had his airhead Fresca place a three way call for Me to Tweety, So it would appear on her call display, As if I had been calling from My home, Her answering machine ,picked up, I explained I had already left town, But truth be told....My ass was living temporarily in the swanky Marriott Suites, Unbeknownst

to Tweety,under her name,I was fucking with Kee via John's phone...I would page His phone and put Tweety's in as the callback number knowing Kee nosy ass would be going through it...Almost two minutes later,with both Ricky and John's phones paired to mine....But I Am glad I did....Gave Me the Motivation and backbone I needed to do what I had to do.

Ricky:Aye man thought I would hit ya up to clown ya ass about Missing out on fucking Ugly Duckling turned Swan!

John:Man dead that...I get too much pussy to worry about one thot getting away...

Ricky:Shiddd....Bitch got fucked good last night!...

I wanted so fucking bad to join In on text... Blatant Lies on Me....

John:MY NIGGA!??...Fuck it...I Ain't sweating it...Bitch ain't used to being fine,She would be thinking She is really all that...

Ricky: Ahh Nigga stop crying!.. When You ever know Me not to get what I want....Bitch invited a nigga to come visit....But aye...She wanna fuck You too...But guess You lose...Lol

John ;Man please...Ain't nobody want Her back in the day,Just wanted to hit it and give Her what She got cheated out on back in the day...Cause Her ass used to be tow up...And that wasn't what a brotha wanted!...

Ricky:Nigga pull up ya panties,Ain't nobody slept with that bitch....Lol.Had yo ass though!

John:Man it was only My dick talking,Was gonna make Her fuck,suck,and lick...then wish the hell Her visit was up! Lol...Shit...I don't even want Kee,let alone a bitch who might get sprung!"

Ricky: How was the class reunion...Lol...Kim and Me didn't make it.. Lol

John:MAN!??,We couldn't get in?

Ricky: WTF?How that happen? Kee ass got drunk?

John:Nahhhh ...Come to find out...Kee ass didn't graduate!

Ricky:LMAO... NIGGA BYE!!

Karma is a bitch!....And She's My BFF!

I decided to get this party started right...It was funny to imagine,Ricky driving and texting,And realizing not once had He noticed His key ring missing from the key ring,Yeah while He was admiring the "New",Stacy and texting Her appearance to John,I silently slid his key ring from the sink island and removed the key I had seen Him use to unlock His and Kim's house,This morning as they left,I was parked down the street,And once I saw both cars pull out onto the street,I exited My car..went around the backyard,And opened it,I made My way up to the master bedroom,I removed a small pull luggage from the closet ,Filled it with tubes and compacts of lipstick and

other cosmetics,Grabbed a see through nightie,And Kim's diaphragm along with the prescription case tossed it in.I closed the suitcase,And left as quietly as I had come,Then just to put another scene a wrap,I called and put a page through to John's phone,Yet this time....I put in Kim's number,knowing Kee would be pissed and demand to know what was up.....Kim would not even have a clue....

I know I should have just leave well enough alone,But I was having flashbacks of years long past yet still very much Boogeyman type of shit,I had each and everything coming into play,And Kee and John are the ones I Am gonna slam dunk.....And Kim...Let's just say.....is certainly the pawn,As for Jen....Not wasting time on that Homemade bitch.....

I made it back in time to activate a green dot card,I had put \$400 on it,In Tweety's name,For which I used to pay for room service,All this like Tweety and and not once had She even missed Her Driver's LicenseBut I was brought out of My presence,When a knock on the door brought Me back to reality...I opened the door....Stood to the side,Let Him into the suite for a night He would never forget.....

He hugged Me”Damn You look great! So You decided to stay a week?”....
He said,Not very happy to hear it...

I had been fucking him all week on the low,But Now He was acting bored with Me,I could feel a pattern forming,Terrence had acted the same way.

“Well don't do a double dutch about it!,You forget You hounded Me!”

“Bitch! Hounding You My ass...I just wanted what I didn't back in the day...Got it...But damn sho don't make You special.....This just means I finally gave You what I been giving You,And the rest of Kee's Ho friends...!

“So what You trying to say John?!”I huffed

“I Am saying,You ain't gotta stay in town....You a fucking dick hound!...

“Nigga...Fuck Your dumb stupid ass.....You begged Me to fuck!”

“Yeah....And now that I have..Ya ass can go back wherever You been the past ten years!,Can't be fucking You no more....I got a family,My wife is one of your fellow hoodrats,And I have a son!,This was just a fuck....Now it ain't even that!...You and that fucking Tweety bitch!...I swear Y'all Thirsty as fuck!”

“What the Fuck John?!....You Fucking Tweety too?!”

“Yea...while You was letting Your letting Your late husband's upgrade Ya..Shiiiiit Tt!..Kim saying I Am the father of the kids,Ricky thinks are His!”
I was shocked....

“Anyway...I'm out.....But for real Yo....You need to do a homeward bound....!”

He finally not only noticed the Négligé,But said...”Fuck it go get in that nightie...Let Me hit it once again..Then ya need to bounce!...

“ You know what?!!!...Hold that thought....I grabbed the garment and went into the restroom,I took special care putting on the see through....Applied lipstick,And joined John as He lay on the bed.....I walked towards Him as He lay on His back,I climbed on top of his nude body,He looked up at Me,And said”Whose Pussy is this He asked,I was silent,I ran My hands to the back of the corset part of the negligee Suddenly He punched Me in the jaw so fast and hard...I was like Stevie Wonder...because I sure didn't see that one coming but I held My composure...Once again He asked” I said Whose Mother Fucking Pussy is this Bitch?!

I swung My hand free and shot Him straight between the eyes!!!!

“IT'S MINE STUPID MOTHERFUCKER!”I then quickly left everything in the room,Since nothing In it belonged to Me,I did however confiscate His phone belonged to Me....I drove down the street,And called the suite,explaining I heard fighting....Then I hurriedly text John phone,Leaving Tweety's number...Except this time...I challenged it...made it look as if they

had plans that day,At Marriott I drove back to Kim's and in her closet,I planted,the phone that belonged to John(He no longer needed it),the gun which I had taken,in a shoebox..Leaving back out quietly...As I drove down the road,I heard both police and EMS... heading to the Marriott....But Not even gonna stay another day in Greer SC.

Greer SC man found dead,Cryptic note on Mirror

"I AIN'T GONNA CHEAT ON YOU NO MORE!"

TO BE CONTINUED!

L your own good,But Yo ass is a damn good student,So I refuse to have you in jail..But Stay away from Mar... Because next time...I will be locked up from handling Yo ass!” Then she walked off,And I was great....Mar,Was truly trying to explain to Me but.....I didn't wanna hear it...Now back to reality..It is time to hook up with My Man..But... Ain't Nothing like the real thing.....

Up With This Shit....I will not put

Kimielle

Every morning I gotta put up with My dorm mate and her fake ass cyber boo having cyber freak em sex! Yep,This chick is involved with a man She has never met in person!..When I tell You this fool gets up at the crack of dawn to get all Gabrielle Union fine,Only to wake My ass up,to hear Her moaning via cyber sex!.Plus She is stupid as Hell... Don't get Me wrong...I love Chablis(Her siblings names are just as intoxicating/But We go back years,East Greer Elementary,Greer Middle,And Greer High,So I know She is a sucka for love!But hell I Am not much better,I met this guy,Ryan who was the shit! He was 5'10,Muscular build,And had the darkest skin....So dark,That if You put salt on Him,He would look like a starry night kinda sexy!

We have been dating six months,And now,He was always making excuses,Beginning of due to working ,He hardly answers My calls,Unless I blow it up and he turns it off,Yes,He has been doing this a lot lately,Even if I

text Him,He will only reply with one word,"Hey"For instance I have been calling and texting,No reply,I drove past His house,only one car in drive-way,His Brother,Timothy's car...Also for a Nigga claiming on the job overtime...must have walked to work...Oh wait...Maybe his car is invisible...Because it wasn't there,But just as luck would have it,Ryan's car sped past mine,So maybe He was leaving work and I didn't see Him,So I called His phone,He answers sounding chipper ,

"Ryan,Are You working overtime?"

He replied,"Yea and gonna be too tired to go to Your party tomorrow night,Sorry Baby"

I continued to follow His car,hoping it was either one of His boys whose car had broken down and borrowed Ryan's,But I just hung up...and kept following His vehicle,He made a turn on Lorla Street,He pulled into the driveway of His house,I parked within ocular privacy I saw Him exit the car,And go into the house,I called and text while I sat watching...He never replied...But then the alert tone from Facebook,Had a green online

dot , meaning He was on Facebook,And had recently put up a post,

Hey Facebook Friends and Family Happy as shit!!,My Girl and I are expecting our first of what will be many!!

#LoveMyWifePaisely!

I was pissed way off, But instead of going off...I drove My ass home, And decided to Get even, What better way to spread a few untruths via social media, There are three ways to get tea brewing, TELEPHONE, TELEVISION, AND TELL FACEBOOK,,!

I posted ,And tagged his ass in the post....***AFTER....I find Mrs. Ryan Benson and send Her a friend request....***

And when I do finally drift off to sleep I Am awakened By Chablis loud ass orgasm from Her bedroom! Old sepia Linda Lovelace ass!

The Sweeter He Is.

I go into the kitchen, My roommate/bestie Kim was looking at Her laptop, eyes glued to the profile of a small, thin blonde chick, What caught My attention was there were pics of this chick, Her name was Paisley and She was standing beside, Ryan, Kim's boyfriend of six months. I was getting ready to ask Kim what was up, But She beat Me to the punch.. She told Me that Ryan was married, And that He had been cheating on His pregnant wife for Her... Now most women would flip, Especially a black woman who has not only been cheated on for a white woman, But to find out Your ass is just a side chick, With stories of love and happiness turned to despair, and rejection, But the fact Paisley was white... was a non factor in Kim's case, Because Her Stepdaddy, Kyle is white... And has been since He married Kim's Mom when Kim was four, And the two proceeded to have three sons together, But You would never know that Kim was not His Biological

child,Because no one treated Her as such,Mr.Kyle's family claimed Kim,from day one,And yep,a few of her fast ass cousins,Especially,Piper and Laurie,were our regular dorm guests,And to be white...These chicks were fun and Ratchet on cue!..Yea...These were our girls!

But this situation with Ryan was pissing Me off and I knew that If I ever had a chance,I would give Him a piece of My mind!Kim had slowed down her wild ass for Ryan,And trust Kim was W.I.L.D..but could have any man she wanted,And She gave Him a chance and He blew it.

“Bliss,Your ass not even ready for Me to tell You this shit!”

I sat down ,She got up,went to the fridge,got a bottle of White Zinfandel,And two glasses,And said”You gonna need a drink to register the shit Ryan has put Me in!”

“Ah..Kim...Damn! How much of this shit have You been drinking,The bottle is damn near empty?”..I asked,Don't get Me wrong,Sociable drinking is cool.. but this bitch was already drunk,And We both had a class later that day,And I was not trying to get expelled,Nor let Her get the situation either.But She kept checking Her Facebook page,Then I realized that She had sent Paisley a friend request,”Kim!...Why you fucking with His wife?!..He is the one who You should be mad at...Plus,She is pregnant...!”

“Bliss...this chick not only fucked ,sucked,or whatever else to My man...And got pregnant with the old Keep a Nigga baby,and eloped..She is Thirsty for doing that....So Imma drive that ho to drink!”

But something else caught My eye about the situation,So I asked Kim”Hmmm...When did you start seeing Ryan?”

She without missing a beat she answered”Since January!...Why?!”

“Look at Her infoYou,Kimielle Nicole Richards....Are the side chick....They got married two months before He began seeing You....So,Not

only did He marry Paisley,before meeting and hooking up with You...He must have been in love with Her,Because She is not quite two months pregnant...So...He has been lying to You...And Her,But Before I could finish,Kim jumped up ,barely made it to the toilet before throwing up!...I just prayed it was the alcohol she had just gulped down,And not the situation,That could lead to Ryan's ass having An extended family on the way...I picked up the glass of wine she had poured for Me,Knocked it back in one gulp,Then just to share My Bestie's pain,I drank the remainder....Kim,was washing her face,Tears streaming from Her eyes,But I was in no condition to console Her,She went back to Her laptop,I fell into a drunken sleep...We missed class

Friend Request and Other Games

As if on cue,Ryan called ,Just when answered his call,,My Facebook notification beeped,Letting Me know Paisley Benson had accepted My friend request ,So I decided to get to the fun and games
“Yo Baby!.Sorry about last night,But I'm working extra,You know You got a birthday coming up!”
“Aww ,I have you,And that is the only gift,I need!”
“I know We have plans tonight,But I gotta take a raincheck,Tim'old lady been trippin'So He staying at My crib,And the guys are coming over to hangout!”
“Ya know what Ryan,I got plans too....And those plans include telling Your expectant wife,.....The dog You are....So no rain check needed!”

“What..Are you talking about?...I Am not.....!”

Cutting him off mid sentence,I said”Well Paisley seems to think you are...And twice as giddy at the baby announcement....Six months of believing You would make Me Your wife someday,When You already have one!”

“Kim....let Me explain..... Remember the girl I dated before We met?,And I told You she was stalking Me?!....This is the chick,Paisley...She lies,photoshops pictures and shit.....You remember...I told You about Her!” He half begged,half pleaded....I simply ended the call....H e had in fact told Me of this,But the version He gave the chick was named Nestlé.....But it was all good,Hell I knew a trick,And He was gonna be it!...Not ten minutes later this fool is at My door.....candy in one hand,flowers in the other,After the excuse He gave for raincheck was out the window,He said”Get dressed.....I never had plans ,Just wanted to surprise You...!”

“Oh yeah....Do I have a surprise for You soon!”

Giving Credit,Before it's Due

Chablis

Since I missed class today,I decided to FaceTime with My Bae,Antoine,But He never signed in...Plus We usually would have talked around this time but , Couldn't reach Him,I never really caught

Him cheating but I have suspected,And contrary to what I overheard Kim thinking out loud about My cyber sex partner,As if I was dating a “catfish”which is untrue,Antoine has actually spent the weekend with Me,When Kim went home to visit Her family,We had all kinda rough freaky ass sex in Her bed...Lol...But Kim is still weary of Him,But I know She can't even talk....Especially since She has found out about Her Prince.....Is not even charming,But that is on Her,I Am just excited that Antoine has told Me He has taken a two week vacation and wanted to come and chill with Me....I Am ecstatic,I Have cleared two top drawers for Him,Moved alot of My clothes around in the closet,For his visit ,I even bought new bedding and groceries for when He would be here,While in the process,Kim,came back,luggage in tow.

“What's Up Kimmy??.Changed Your mind?!”

“Yes....Girl,Ryan said He wanted to spend time with Me before He leaves for His Annual National Guard assignment!”

Wanting to be happy for Her,But was hoping it wouldn't throw a wrench into My plans with Antoine,”Wow,Antoine is also coming to visit,.....!” I said,watching Her “Oh Lawd” expression,But She said”Cool....How long is He staying,We can have a couple's night out!.

..”

She slapped Me a high five,And headed straight for the mail,She had been working overtime for three weeks and still came up short on Her dorm fees,I mean there have been times when I was broke,And she carried Me so right now,I Am not tripping We always had each other's back,But She had also been hounded by bill collectors

lately,And Her drug dealer brother,Saadiq made a trip up here to bring Her \$3000,And when she told Me,She borrowed it for Ryan ,in order for Him to put down on a car,since His was a clunker,So She lent Him the money,However,He told Her it was being detailed,and that it was a weekend car,So I was kind of pissed.....No Rent! But He gets to style a new car at not only Kim's expense but mine also! But I kept it quiet,I was just looking forward to 'Toine"visiting so She and I spent the evening planning and Thinking we were told the luckiest women in the world.We were young and both a bit green in the e romance department but,You couldn't tell Us shit.....And that was to our disappointment,in the long run but now We were happy...And what does two young ladies do when they are Happy????....They go clubbing....Hell.....Celebrating our last weekend as single ladies!!!!

Get it Beyonce!!!

Ladies Night.....Kool & The Gang Style

Kimielle

My girl Chablis and I hit up this spot We heard of in Spartanburg called "They Playhouse"Her cousin,Sandy was the owner,Now let Me tell You something about Sandy,She was in her mid thirties,5'1 weighed a buck O five,But would start a fight in an empty room with the boxing skills of Mike Tyson,Long story short.....Sandy was our

girl, And was always inviting us out to Her club.... A me tonight We were showing love!., Chablis in her body hugging fitted gold dress, with lace up sandals, Her shoulder length hair was in a tight bun with tendrils hanging down, Looking very much like Laura Winslow, I wore skinny jeans, with a low cleavage turquoise button down the back semi sheer blouse, with turquoise huarache sandals..... Kenya Moore style, We were two bitches, Gone With The Wind Fabulous!

Sandy came over” Oh.... Hookers at the motherfuckng point!..... Glad y'all came out... whatcha drinking on?”

We just told her to surprise us, And we found two seats near the bar, And the view was great, Meaning, all eyes were on Bliss and Me, And we got all type of salty looks, from thotilicious ass chicks, But who cared, They knew not to get in our space so as long as they knew their role, Step back.... It was all good. Then I heard a sexy sultry voice saying, ”Kim Richards?!!.... That You?” I turned to see Cedric Grayson, a guy I had the biggest crush on for most of My Elementary School through middle school, Of Course, He was older, And never saw Me as anything as Lil K, Then again He was no fool, My younger brothers, Saadiq, and Ballard, were nobody's playmates.... And I, Kim was their pride and joy, And Cedric, was a dog ass nigga..... But He was a fine ass dog ass nigga.... So I had no need to put on or take off My big girl panties, Because I wasn't wearing any... Hell after all Ryan was out of town, And a bitch was horny..... He walked up to Me smelling like Issey Miyake cologne, Then pulled Me into a hug, And looking over My shoulder, He looked at Bliss, And said “Chablis”

Her simple ass spoke back”Nigga!” With a sour face,She never liked Cedrick,And I never knew why,And He obviously just found out,But at the moment I could care less,I was not in. Awe and walked hand in hand to the dance floor with Cedric,Yea....I know this is a girl’s night out....And We were gonna do just that....We were gonna hang out and have fun....But I was gonna fuck Cedric.....For perks! I could see Bliss ass rolling her eyes,But Who do You know gonna turn down the chance to get with their crush from back in the day? ,Hell Let Don Robinson's ass ask Her to pass the salt back in the day....Her ass would have handed him the salt,pepper...and the ass....But she is saving up for Antoine’s visit....Hope that well don't run dry, because She is gonna be having to pull overtime,To pay for his two weeks visit....like I don't know that She pays for everything,Because He got hurt on his job at Harbor Freight,And has yet to get his settlement,Yea Riiiiiggh!.....,But She has carried Me plenty of times,But I hope like hell ,He does pay her back,Because Quiet as it is kept,I have been bumming money from My brothers to help Ryan out,And I Am feeling kinda stupid since I have been talking to Paisley,Yea....Like I said....I got a surprise for that Ass!....

When You see who Your Friends Are

I Am about ready to leave Kim,’ass right on the dance floor right along with Ryan and the rest of the Solid Gold dancers,But then again....I could not leave Her alone with Cedric.....that would give

him an excuse to drive her home, Have a nightcap ,then get exactly what He took from Me when I was Sixteen....against My will..... And the shame, and the humiliation of damn near dying from an illegal abortion, I made up a lie and told My family, it was from a guy who had lied to Me, And gave me a falsified name before He left for the Army, They were livid, More than though, they were heartbreaker for Me, My brothers, Vause (Courvoisier) and Dom (yes, middle name Perignon) Were still not convinced of the lie, But knowing in My heart that Kim had an unrequited love for Cedric, I never told, And I will never mother a child due to the trauma, I was given a hysterectomy. And watching this dog ass nigga brought so much pain... I shot Kim a text message, telling Her I was gonna head home, Her reply.., "Giggle"Be safe...Don't wait up,!" Lol.... I shook My head and ass outta there..Hell, I was gonna go facetime with My Antoine, And surprise him.....He heat Me to the punch with a surprise of his own!

Standing there looking better than a butter pecan pint of ice cream, Which I had in my freezer, and my munchies having ass was feening for!

"Surprise!" He hugged Me ,smelling so good!" I decided to come a few days early!"

I was so glad to see him, I never noticed He was driving a UHaul truck....And squealed" Oh!!! You got your job transfer?!!.. You never said it was for U-Haul....He smiled and kissed My forehead!....I opened the door as he brought not only the two luggage he had at my door, But two more he had in the truck....But I was too happy to say

anything except for move a few more of My items around to make room for his!

One For Old Times Sake

I was dancing my ass off and Bliss shoots Me a text asking if I was ready?....Hellz no I getting to know Cedric,And once he agreed to take Me home.....I excused Myself to the ladies room,I had worked up a sweat,And took a quick whore's bath....When I went back out,Cedrick was blowing his nose,,,Please don't let this nigga have a cold because I can't be catching illness when My Ryan spends the weeks he promised...Cedrick saw Me and quickly asked if We could go back to dance floor,said different scents of colognes and perfumes gave him the sniffles,I could see why he was sneezing....there were mixes of Old Spice,Old English,And Brut mixed with funk....So as we began dancing,He yelled to the deejay and yelled”Yo Rocsteady!...gimme my money worth....Then Betty Wright’s Tonight is The Night blasted....My parents and every black household had this album.....A ah yea.....Cedric began kissing Me.....And the next thing I knew we were in a back booth empty bottle of champagne with powdered sugar on top....Hell All I remember is us finally drunk and horny at My apartment....I opened the door,And it was on!...My back against the wall,legs wrapped around Cedric’s broad back as we both sweated and humped like rabbits.....best two minutes ever....yeah not only did he cum in two minutes..To My horror,Bliss was standing in the kitchen with disgust all on her face...As if she were having a flashback or something ,But she said nothing,Turned on her heels,and went back into Her

bedroom.....Hold on this bitch had on a see thru nightie.....And as I turned around,Cedric who had busted a two minute humped nut was so hard as a rock,eyes glued to the sway in Bliss' ass.....I was pissed but he grabbed Me back in his arms,This time I led him to My bedroom,so there would be no interruptions,And there wasn't....Nigga's dick had gone flaccid and after sucking it 30 minutes,I gave up fell asleep,until I heard moaning from Bliss'room....But what really got Me was Cedric was wide awake,Listening,eyes closed and jacking his enormous dick,Until He was àzq I groaned,spurting we everywhere...This is gonna take a lot of explaining on his part...I **know** My best friend better than anybody,And Bliss is **everybody's** girl...by that I mean You could hold a damn election,And Bliss was loved by everyone,That is the person she is So yea!..If Bliss has a problem with Cedric so do I.....And My brothers! So trust there would be some hood shit going down!

Nightmare ,But waking up in My Man 's Arms

I drifted off to sleep,And My nightmare took Me back to the night I was 16 and Cedric changed My life forever,And not in a good way,He and My two brothers,Vause,and Dom were pretty tight back in the day,One weekend our parents went out of town and since Cause was twenty,It was decided,He could handle Dom and I,But no parties,However Cedric and another friend were allowed to sleep over as added protection,When Cedric and I were watching TV as My brothers and their friend,

Sammy played cards, Cedric watched Me like a damn vulture, I was very uneasy. But Kim liked having Him around, To make a long story short, One night He, My brother, Dom and Sammy came home drunk, Well they were drunk, He was tipsy, He got the two of them to bed, And came into the den with Me, I was watching The Inkwell, And He joined Me, We were just enjoying ourselves, When He asked if I wanted anything to drink... He and I sat sipping on My very first wine cooler, But it seemed not to affect Him at all. I would later realize it was spiked with something called Everclear vodka... Long story short..., He grabbed Me and put his hand over My mouth And threatened if I told or screamed he would break My neck then set the house on fire, And burn it to the ground with everyone inside!... It was the most excruciating pain, I ever felt in My young life, As if My vagina was being stretched by one of those to of war ropes, I don't know how long it took for Him to work himself into an orgasm, because I was violated by him the entire night, While My parents were away, And My brothers and their other friend were passed out drunk, For weeks I kept to Myself, Then came the day, My breakfast came up as soon as it went down... I was pregnant, And I knew it, But through no fault of My own, But I wished Myself dead I, And it hurt most not being able to tell Kim, I just kept hiding it until, I came up a plan, Since drinking got Me into trouble, I decided to let it finish the job... I woke up in the middle of the night, Snuck into My Dad's liquor cabinet and drank a whole bottle of, 100% grain alcohol, And woke up two days later, Hospitalized, Alcohol poisoning, And miscarried the fetus, My parents asked over and over why did I not talk with them?, And I never answered, And I also never fell for the right guy when the pain subsided, I just kept to Myself, Of course Kim and I were thick as thieves, But since Cedric treated Me as if I were a slut... I began to behave that way also.... I made it through High School, And Kim and I went to Greenville Technical

College, And moved into a dorm off campus, And since then, there was a part of Me who felt as if I really had trouble keeping a man, But I realized, Had made the situation worse, Instead of Being the fun loving girl I once was, I slept with at least three different guys a week, And They all got what they wanted and left Me, But Antoine, so far was different, And today, Seeing Him arrive early, Made My day great, My night wonderful... And Everything else verrryyy moist..... Duncan Hines has nothing on Ya Girl trust, !...., But then..... Cedric stumbles in drunk as hell, Trying to play Kim's ass You know what... That's on Her.... But to Me if She didn't know she was being played.... Then deuces.... But that nigga need to be ghost by the time I wake up!

Let The Doorknob hit ya, Where the Good Lord Split Ya!

I woke up this morning, Bliss was already out the door, So I felt the coast was clear for Me But to get Cedric the hell up outta this house before Bliss had the po po up and escort his ass up and out , But He was gone.... Thank God, Because today was the day I had to get things ready for Ryan's visit, And although Cedric was still My first crush... He was the worst fuck I have ever had, And believe Me, there have quite a few, And a Ho that does not make, Because I was in it for love, they were in it for pussy..... I shook Him, He grunted, threw a pillow in My direction And said "I ain't leaving here hungry... Go fix ya man some food....!"

I went down the hall opened the cabinet, I heard Him saying He was about to shower, So He could eat and run real quick, Had a very important meeting with a business partner, Of baller as He said , But I knew he was a baller on a baller on a budget, Ten minutes later He walked into the kitchen, Fully dressed

and there had been no sign of a shower,Bastard stopped and looked at the breakfast I had prepared,Damn straight...I fixed his ass a bowl of Froot Loops! Damn if I'm cooking a damn thing for Him to Fuck and Not cooking a meal for Him to go shit it out in the next bitches toilet! What really got Me was this fool ate the big bowl full and the remainder of the box.....I was like”Ummm I really need to get some business handled,So.....! ,I told him as I went into My bedroom to grab My purse
He belched then got up, And said I feel you...,Kissed Me ,And left....promising I would never forget the night we spent together!...I couldn't shut that door quick enough,As I got into My car,He got into his and peeled off....Good bye and Good riddance....I drove from Greer SC to Lyman in ten minutes to pay the remainder of the on the new King size bedroom suite,I thought would be perfect for us,But My money was gone....Nah He did actually leave a few loose coins,! Damn! Not only had this nigga ***fucked Me....but he fucked Me financially,!!!***
God knows I didn't want to hear Bliss mouth about Cedric....So I dipped into My portion of the rent money,And splurged on My man's visit,Hell Ryan had true bank,And I knew He would give it to Me to replace and then some!...But oh A bitch gonna get back at Cedric about My damn money!

Couple Of Fools

Antoine

I woke up,turning My head slowly,to face the pretty lady,I have been missing like crazy,Her name was Chablis,I and her roommate called her Bliss,I don't

know why Kim calls her that...But the way Baby Girl works that ass....I call Her "Blissful",But truth be told,I was not in love with Her,In fact I didn't love her,Or the other two chicks I been using as a place to shack until My wife Vanessa let Me come home,Or at least until I convince Her I had done My non contact admittance in rehab,Yeah,I Am an addict,But not drugs or alcohol,I was as sex addict....And had 9 kids by 7 different women,My two older ones were by My wife,Vanessa,the others live here and there...And I ain't gonna stress it... My in house kids,are twins and I only tolerated them,Women are nothing but Oldest Keep A Nigga sneaky Hoes....Especially My wife,This chick had it going on when we first met,She was much like Bliss,in college,But Vanessa's parents were the uppity,type due to the fact Her parents owned their own accounting firm,And that is what sold Me on the idea of kicking it with Her,And it was no secret,Nobody in the Her family,Thought I was shit....I mean....I Ain'tBut She kept throwing her hints about,Her being the oldest,If anything happens to her parents,She would be the executive of their estates,And the more she threw Me that dream,the more She threw the pussy My way,The more I fell into it,Next thing I knew,I Am standing beside her telling Her parents that She was pregnant,Next thing I knew I was married to a chick who was not who,what or How she pretended to be sweet,From the moment I said I do...The bitch started tripping ,But I could have given a damn about a marriage license,Or the marriage for that matter,And to Me it was a man made law....So I made it My law,to deal with Kwanzaa(Yep I always meet the chicks with the fucked up names,And the fucked up bitch she turns into),Brittany,was cool,but had four babies for four different men(I stand accused),Then there was Layla...who was actually cool,But that only lasted until She found out about My wife,and supposed to be My twins,Or should I say,Until Vanessa caught Layla and Me fucking in the marital bed ,Vanessa

and I shared, But Vanessa and the kids, were supposed to be gone for the weekend, And it was Her nosy ass fault, Should not have been looking for trouble... The fucked up thing is like Chris Brown said, These Hoes ain't loyal, "Twin?!... Who the fuck is that?! Layla screamed as she jumped across, Now the whole time, She is not even the one Vanessa was hitting, But she shouted, "I Am his wife!"

Layla then lunged at Me..... They beat My ass... Then afterwards, these bitches slapped each other a high five!..... And now the two are besties!..... I cannot stand Layla's ass now, So I just had to take an "L" on that one, And try to fly straight, Until Her parents, gave Me enough ammunition to become a dog again,

"Hurry up!... the twins and I are in the car!" she shouted.

"Yeah, Why the hell they invite us to a Sunday dinner on a Wednesday night?... And what surprise do they have....?"

She laughed and said "I bet My brother is home from the Air Force, And they want to surprise Me, with his celebratory homecoming!"

I just drove thinking, Who wants to celebrate, Wesley, Jr being home? , I liked and was disliked him in addition to His Dad, And My mother in law , Yvonne.... But I could be cordial... However upon driving up.... A tall brown skin brother with a low cut, and dressed ivy league stepped out of the door... Vanessa saw Him, And damn year crawled out of the window to get to this dude, Who was not Her, brother, Or anyone else I had met in her family.... Before I could get out and see what was going on, dude walked up to Me and was like "Whaddup Bro?!" And tried to shake My hand, just as I was gonna be cordial, He stepped on My white on white Air Max!, He yanked open the car door, And started playing with the twins.... Not that it bothered Me because it didn't, I just didn't know who this fool was... But I found out as

Ms.Yvonne came out and said “Surprise!!!!!!!,T.J is home,so he and his Mom got together to throw Him a welcome home dinner,But we knew He would love to see You,meet the twins,And see the man She married AFTER T.J AND NESSA BROKE UP!”

“What the fuck?!...Nessa.Get your ass back in this damn car!....Y'all got Me fucked up!”

See Vanessa was always a shit talker when she had an audience,And Talked so much shit,

That I just shut up and went along with the shit,But debt would be paid,So what if I Am coming off cold,But it was just My luck,I had run across Bliss on Facebook,And when She told Me the agonizing details of being barren,And unable to have babies,we got closer,Met and have been fucking ever since,Vanessa let Her parents invite her old flame,And His Mother Winslow wanna be ass anywhere near My wife!...So when We got home,I told Her ass I needed space,But at first I would only stay with Bliss every other weekend,But now I got chicks Claiming I'm their baby daddy,Vanessa put Me out,at least until the paternity DNA test came back,And not one of My Baby's Mama's would let Me crash,So Bliss ,being naive,would send Me money thinking I was a stockbroker,And I was turning her money into financial security and making Her more money in the stock market,But I used that money to break off My baby's mama's money, until paternity,And using My skills of survival,I began to make Bliss think We have a future together,After all She had given Me a green dot card with a \$500 limit..So I left,My secrets back home in Boiling Springs,Or so I thought! But last night when I showed up to Surprise Bliss,She was happy to see Me,But later on when her girl Kim came home with a dude ,Cedric ,Bliss was so mad,I knew something was up,But Kim seemed to really like the guy,But the peek I got of Him,I knew why,This nigga was a straight up,undercover cocaine

user, Trust I use to sell it, And the guys who tried to hide it from their wives until they become impotent, And that is exactly what happened, between Kim and Cedric, Because on My way to take a piss I heard the whole damn thing, But later while Bliss and I were fucking the shit outta each other, My peripheral caught this nigga peeking into our room, I heard Kim come out and ask, "What you doing?!..

He seemed shocked, "I was looking for the bathroom,...!"

Kim laughed, "It's the next door...Hurry back to bed....You still owe Me one...!"

He smacked her on the ass....and went into the bathroom...When after Bliss and I exploded at the same time....a few minutes later, We heard that nigga bust a loud ass masturbated nut...Then without hearing any water, He didn't even flush the toilet or anything.....And I do mean Anything, Because later on I heard Kim complaining,....After Bliss had left for the morning, I don't know what was up with Her and Cedric in the past, Didn't care, But I had to have a place to lay My head, And I knew He could not be around, So I waited, Kim was in the kitchen....Cedric slept a while, until Kim woke Him to wash up and eat....Then when the bedroom was empty, I made sure to guarantee Kim would not have Him back at the apartment, I stole her cash from her purse, Thinking that no black woman, white woman, or any other race would forgive a man for stealing, But some women forgive, Anything....And Sad to say Kim was that woman! I fucked around and hooked Bliss, intelligent ass..When It was obvious, Kim was the fool I should have taken for a scam!....Playas make mistakes too!

Ryan

What A Fool Believes

Kim called Me eight times in one hour, And each time I hit the ignore button, Paisley was right beside Me, And I couldn't answer, So I knew She was gonna keep on until I either called back or answered, Which wasn't gonna be anytime soon, I already had Paisley believing I was going on a two week business trip, But really, I Am gonna be held hostage by Kim for two weeks, I had been putting it off for a while, And Paisley was beginning to be on My ass about any and everything, So maybe with Kim, I could unwind, And fuck her so silly that it won't even matter when I tell Her about Paisley, and expecting a child. First before You label a brother, I love Paisley, She is My wife and soon to be mother of My child, And Kim.... Kim was just a fuck, And money when I needed it, But lately She has been listening to her friend Chablis, Who told Her I was hiding something and asked why We scarcely saw each other,, So now I gotta hang with Her for two weeks, At least that way she should be satisfied, And promised to not be so clingy again, By that time, I should have enough from Her to relocate with My wife and baby without so much of a Bye Bitch! Don't get Me wrong, Kim is fine as hell, But still She had her shortcomings, She was bossy as fuck, And was trying Her damndest to get a ring on Her finger.... Good Luck on that one, And I Ain't the one, ! Like I said, I already have a wife, Kim just doesn't know and I plan to keep it that way... Until I got enough money out of Her to relocate My family, Funny thing is ,I trapped Her ass because She and I lived by the same creed..... Gold-diggers, She truly had a wealthy family, But I gave Her the impression that My family was far wealthier, Truth be told, My Dad is a mean, unemployed drunk, living with My equally drunk, And equally unemployed living on Welfare... Paisley is where most of My finances

lay, But I would always take brand new and never worn dresses ,shoes, handbags, And send them to Kim as proof of My wealth, then Paisley would always accuse Her Sister Trina of stealing them, I would shake My head , Put it this way, Paisley simply is the one who can afford Me, See Paisley , was rich rich, Kim was only hood rich, And hood rich is what I call Nigga Tragedy money!

Chablis

Who pissed in your coffee

It was good having Antoine wake up in My bed, I peeked and watched him studying Me , He had such a look of love, I had to turn over and pretend to still be asleep. I know people have warned Me about trusting Him too quickly, people being Kim, But when She came home earlier, She didn't say shit, When Antoine, Set up Her new King size bed. And help rearrange Her bedroom to accommodate Ryan's visit..two weeks, That I will not believe until I see, But as I said She never said a word, Such as "Bliss, Here is My portion for two months rent... But Nothing, And I Am not gonna start anything with Her, Especially. since I really needed to talk with Her about Cedric, But seeing how excited She was about Her boo visiting, It could wait, As for Her portion of the rent, Again, I had to pay her back portion, She stumbled into the kitchen this morning, "Girl. I Am so happy not to have a class today, I couldn't sleep very well last night!"

I gave her a quizzical look, And she explained that Ryan was upset with Her.

“Why should He be upset? He should know You would dump Him when You found out He was married with one on the way....,I just hate that You spent money anticipating his visit...”

“Girl....I didn't tell Him I know He is married,Or that his wife Paisley and I are friends on Facebook...But To hell with that,He is still gonna be here tomorrow..!”

I shook My head and laughed....So You still gonna be with Him?...He is married... Apparently You are setting him up for gut punch when He arrives....!”

“Bliss ,Please if Paisley and home life were so great He wouldn't be with Me in the first place....So I feel that if He plays with Me....then that proves that He married Her before He really knew what was out there...And I'm out there....!”

“Kim,He married Her while dating or seeing you what twice every two weeks,out of a month?...So no He knew You were out there,But his want to be Ivy League ass wanted someone else,And no matter what...He married her,She is pregnant,And you..,”I mushed a blueberry muffin in her face and ran out the door “Are wrong!”

She laughed and said”Ha.Ha.Ha.....And Your ass is locked outside...She said dangling My keys....I ran fast before her silly ass locked Me out for real....As We were laughing out loud....Antoine,Came into the hallway fully dressed,grabbed a cup of coffee,Before He could even say Good Morning,He sternly said”You two need to grow the fuck up...Playing this early in the

damn morning!,He then grabbed his keys and said “I'm out,Be back aroundSix!”

Now I have never seen this side of

Him,And both Kim and I gave each other “WTF was that looks”!

Kim

Well Damn,!

Ryan was on his bullshit last night so I just went to bed,to sleep,But was still thinking of Cedric stealing My fucking money,But after Antoine and his outburst this morning I decided to stick around and keep Bliss company...I also felt that Antoine,May have a bit of anger management problems.I don't know what His problem is ,But if He even thinks about taking them out on Bliss,Then He would have a problem,And I Am not talking math book!...I don't like something about Him,He reminded Me so much of the type of dog ass dude in Tyler Perry plays! Plus I overheard this fool whisper/shouting into His phone to someone earlier,And I bet You the rent money,that I don't have that He has a wife and kids hidden away somewhere,But I just shrugged it off,I was determined to find Cedric and cuss him straight out,For taking My money,I showered,and got dressed,told Bliss I had to run an errand,Now I Am cruising the block like a crackhead,Trying to find a nigga whose dick reacts like one,Flaccid Dicks and Kim don't mix.....Bingo,I see His ass,I pull up to Him,As He stands making a deal....My guess would be He is the customer,

“Cedric....Come Here gotta ask You something!”Damn he was still fine....But this was about My money.

“Dayum U greedy,didn’t I break You off yesterday????”His friends laughed,He was trying to play Me,the customer,Good looking can’t fuck,Before He had a chance to shine and brag to his friends,I was gone on the dick....I realize,this negro is ignorant,So I put his ass on blast....He walked up to Me and asked Who was I to him anyway.....I Am the bitch who is now about to put a hit out on His ass!

He walks up,And said”Dayum You miss Me that much you gotta track My ass down huh?!”

“Cedric...Why did You take My fucking money?!”

He told Me to stop causing a scene,the block was hot,

“Look ,Let’s talk about this somewhere else,Because Your paycheck to paycheck ass doing a lil too much!”

I rolled My eyes,Got into the driver side,And drove Us to His place to talk! As soon as We get inside the apartment.....He is all over Me...

“Now what money?!...He asked while unbuttoning My blouse,Then exposing My nipple before taking it into his mouth and it felt good as hell,Not gonna lie,I felt like what damage could it do..He owed Me a proper fuck and the first lousy lay was really still a salty issue for Me,

He lay Me on the sofa,And before I had a chance to heat up,He slammed his overrated,undersized penis inside of Me,”THIS WHAT THE FUCK YOU WANTED....TALKING ABOUT I TOOK YO MONEY!..YOU JUST LIKE THE REST OF MY HOES,MAKE ANY EXCUSE TO GET AT DADDY!..I OWN YO YOUNG ASS...NOW I OWN THIS PUSSY!...then after two minutes He came hard and his weight dropped on Me....Orgasm or not....I was getting My money,And the way his place looked,He could afford it!....He got his naked ass up,And said “Seriously I Ain’t got yo money,Hell

the way You always splurging on shit to finance that side nigga of yours, You Ain't got no damn money!"

"Cedric!, I Am not leaving until You give My money,.. !"

"That is on you, But when Bryna gets home, You gonna take all of an ass whipping!.....!"

"Oh so you bring Me to one of Your Hoes, places and fuck Me, Then refuse to pay Me?!... Fuck it.... Yo Hoe gonna run Me My fucking money.... Put Her on the stroll with ya other hoes!"

He gripped My neck and banged My head against the wall "BRYNA IS NOT A HOE... BRYNA IS MY WIFE, YOU ... SEE YOU ARE ONE OF HOES.... KEEP MY WIFE NAME OUT YOUR FUCKING MOUTH.... UNLESS MY DICK IS IN YA MOUTH, AND I'M TELLING YOU YOUR HEAD AND PUSSY GAME CANNOT EVEN COMPETE!" GET DA FUCK ON BITCH... GOT YO MONEY, YO ASS AIN'T GOT NO MONEY!"

He pushed Me out the door and slammed it so hard, It hit Me in the back by now, I'm just pissed, and crying so hard, That I didn't see the young lady coming up the stairway, She asked if I was ok, I told Her, I had just been kicked out by My boyfriend, She shook Her head and said "Girlfriend.... Your makeup is running all over Your face, Come into My place, Let's at least calm your nerves, My man has put Me through a lot over the years, So I know Your pain.... Now get up and Well can either coffee it up, soda it up.... Turn it up !" She said, Holding up a bottle of whip cream vodka. I laughed and offered to help Her with Her bags, before I could say Anything We were standing where I had been ten minutes prior, It was priceless when she said, "I'm Bryna, !" She smiled

I began to introduce Myself,the apartment door opened and ,Bryna,said”And this is My husband Cedric...Who is always on his way out whenever,I’m on My way in!”

I extended My hand and said”Hi,I’m Kimielle,but friends call Me Kim” Bryna,spoke to Him as if He was Her child,”Thought You had business to handle?!!.....,Be out Kim and I are gonna have a nice little talk....So Bye!” He weakly smiled and left.....I could see the beads of sweat,Bryna shook her head and told Me”Lesson one....That going there.....Is a dog ass nigga!” I laughed,Because this shit was too easy....I bet that by tomorrow,Somehow I would have My money back,Because although He claimed not to have taken it,He will do his damndest to pay to shut Me up....I do think Bryna wears the pants in the marriage,And before it was said and done he would bow,like a bitch in a dress,Because looking at the two of them,You never would have thought them to be a couple,let alone having two kids together,Before the two hour visit ended we exchanged numbers and I wanted Her to go to a comedy show with Bliss and Me,But Bliss wanted nothing to do with anyone connected to Cedric,There is a story in here somewhere,But who do I trust to give it to Me!

Antoine

Making My paper Boo Boo

The money I had stolen from Kim,And drove it to Rock Hill to give to Vanessa ,When who should open her door,but that Bitch made nigga TJ.I was pissed off

“Bitch how you gonna have this nigga fucking you in the house with My fucking kids here?”

“Twon ,You could care less about these kids,or ones you got in those streets,So how you gonna even gonna front,?!”

I took the money that I had taken from Kim,flashed it in old dude and her face,Then calmly said,”,,”This Money was for the kids,!,” Then advised TJ....”You got it my nigga! Feed em til they look like you!”I'm out!”

T.J stepped outside and asked to speak with Him man to man...I said “That depends...! “

“Depends on What?!”

“What man gonna talk for your punk ass??!”

He shrugged and told Me to hold up a sec,He dialed a number,And a tall brown skinned chick came outside ,”This is My wife ...Patricia Glenn Evans,So why would I be interested in taking up your slack homie?!..”

“ Oh so all y'all freaks?!!!”

He squared off and said”Nigga My wife and Yours have been friends for years....And You let ya in law's put that used to date shit in ya head .ya listened so you had an excuse to runI went to a damn dance with Vanessa when We were in Middle School!...Damn Bruh. ..You just gonna just walk away from Your wife....And kids,And the one on the way?!”

What the fuck did this nigga just say?.....His uppity ass wife looked at Me with disgust when Vanessa walked outside with tears in Her eyes....I wanted to come back home....But now....Fuck that!....I just looked at Her,And said,See you on Sister Wives! I'm out!

Chablis

You need to talk to Yo Girl!

While Kim was out, Antoine called Me, I started to let it ring, But I wanted to hear His excuse for snapping at Kim and Me, And for disrespecting Me in My own home.

“Hello?!” I sighed

“Yeah, whatcha doing?!”

“, Waiting for an apology...”

“Tell that to the person who owes it to you.... Yo dumb ass friend Kim, I don't know how two grown ass women can act like kids!”

“What is it Twon?, You homesick or something?”

“Own way there, Get dressed, taking you out to eat, Let Kim starve, freeloading ass,!”

“Starve?”

“Oh My bad.... Starve or suck a dick!”

“Bye Twon, See You in a bit!” I said hanging up on him, Just as I was about to get ready to go out to dinner with Twon, Somebody knocked at the door, I asked who is it, And He said “It’s Ryan!!”

I opened the door and there He was, He rudely walked in with two suitcases, rude as hell, “Where Kim ass at?!...”

I said “Probably somewhere else, All I know is She isn’t here,,,,, So You might wanna text or call Her because I Am busy!”

I proceeded down the hallway, to handle My business, At least Kim can now pay Her portion of her back rent, since She swore to be Big Daddy Rich.

As I finished My bath Kim had come home, And was grinning like Jimmy Carter was Her Grandpa! I was glad to see her happy, Although Ryan sat looking as if He was being held hostage, But I also wondered where His pregnant wife was, But shit, if He didn't care.... I didn't even give a damn, Truth be told something about his vibe told Me He was done with

Kim,I don't know if it was just Me,or the fact I heard him whisper to Himself”I gotta end this shit!”

Antoine

Shallow as a puddle of water

Fuck Vanessa!....How the fuck is She pregnant again?!
See this is the type of person My soon to be ex wife was,shallow as a puddle of water!,Another fucking mouth for her to feed!,Not that I ever put any money in on anything,But it was fucking up the plan...We had a five year prenuptial agreement,And it sets Me free,And rich if I can eek out another month as Her husband,And as far as her being pregnant,Hell it's not My first,But damn sure gonna be the last with Vanessa,those other Hoes,They got new baby Daddies,let them foot the bill...One thing about Bliss,If I was not a true dog,She would be the one,Especially after she showed Me papers about her not being able to conceive a child,I sat and acted like a wounded animal,But inside I was happy as hell,Add that to the fact she is making good cheese in her work study program,She used to send Me money here and there whenever,I would call with a son story,But lately Kim has been leaving her stuck with all the bills,In spite of the fact that Kim also was in a work study program,And her parents sent Her \$1200 a month,Bliss best friend Kim,Should have been My target,But ,I Am still gonna get money off her ass one way or another,See I know how much of a hoe Kim is,And doubted very seriously if she wanted anybody to know she sold pussy to anyone,in order to line another nigga's pockets.....So I would have no problem getting Her to be

a factor in the come up...She may have been Bliss's best friend,But I sensed an envy of Bliss in Her from day one,And since She couldn't seem to get the attention Bliss got,Kim was way fine too,like Bliss,But She was lacking in two things,She had low self esteem,And was promiscuous...All the recipe a hungry ass bruh like Myself needed!.....to use and toss away like Kleenex!

Chablis

When 4 becomes a crowd

Ryan and Kim have been in her room ,So I decided to throw together a quick dinner ,So whenever Twon brought his ass home,I made spaghetti,Italian bread,And a chef salad,And since it was sort of a celebration .So as I was finishing up,I text Antwone,

Me:Hi.Dinner is waiting,So Am I....

Antoine: "My Girl"..Otw!

I smiled and freshened up My make up,And when Kim and Ryan emerged from the room,Kim began setting the table...And as Ryan sat down,He seemed a bit distant,But I guess if I were married,lied to spend a few days with the chick you were supposed to be dating,While,and during the time you married another chick,You know that look....I certainly do, So to break the ice,I asked"How are things going Ryan?" He smiled",Well,As yet so far so good,Just making a few adjustments,Positive ones,"He added.

Kim was just glowing as He spoke,It was then I heard Twon pull up,So I stood to open the door for Him,As He walked up the driveway,I noticed ,or should I say ,Smelled the scent of liquor and weed....But just smiled and said”Come on...dinner is just waiting,For You,”

“Thanks Baby....I got the munchies like Hell! He walked in Behind Me and stopped when He noticed Ryan,So Kim quickly made the introductions,
“Twan,this is My man Ryan,...Ryan this is Team...”

The two men dapped each other up!

“What's Good Ryan?!”

“Hey Man,Shit....just chilling....taking a break,ya know!”

“I feel You on that!,Let Me go wash up right quick!” Twan said,He walked down the hall and I followed,Once it the restroom,He began washing his hands,Ignoring Me,Once He was done He asked”Oh so now ya freeloader Kim has brought a stray for the ride huh?”

I said”He is only gonna be here a few days,And I need to tell You a secret and Please do not say anything,But...He is married!,Yet Kim has not told him she knows,They were dating,And he secretly married this other chick who He got pregnant!”

Twan looked at Me,As if He was trying to see if I felt this was or wasn't an issue with Me,But I didn't feel one way or another,Hell,Kim was My best friend,And I was not her judge or juror.

Twan just laughed as We went to have dinner,Kim was fixing Ryan's plate,And for some reason all He wanted was the chef salad,And bread... Spaghetti,I thought was loved by everyone,But Hell more for Leftovers.Ryan had brought a bottle of Cristal to go with our first dinner,And Twan being Twan,was not about to pass up a drink,especially a drink so expensive that He smiled and grinned as Kim took pics of Him to upload pics of Him holding the Cristal bottle to his social media later,At least He was not being

the asshole He was earlier that morning, But the more He drank ,the more relaxed he seemed to get, As We all ate and had great conversation, And it was then that Twan asked "Aye.... Bliss and Kim pissed Me off being noisy and shit this morning, So I had to get away, But He said ,holding up a bag of weed, at least \$30 worth, Now neither Kim or I smoke, And Twan knew this but ,I was about to ,at the same time tell Him that Ryan didn't smoke either, But He cut us off," Damn Twan.... You gonna spark some of that shit, If not... let Me buy some from you!" Surprising the hell out of both Kim and Me, Even Twan looked surprised.

Twan said "Man ya money no good with Me... I share the wealth.... What You know about that?!! He opened the bag, and let Ryan smell it.... then ,Gave Ryan two blunts...., Then kept two out for Himself. Ryan looked at Twan and said" Let's Do this!....!

To say Kim and I were shocked would be a mild understatement. And what would happen later would not even know the meaning of the world mild!

Antoine

Talk about Being Blunted.... And Blunt

I knew this nigga would know how to hold his liquor and secrets... unless He was Blunted! He did not disappoint!.... I noticed He refused spaghetti but he ate all the bread and salad, Bliss, Kim ,And I only got one helping ,But spaghetti was on point so the three of us ate, And it was obvious old boy had the munchies, But not enough to eat that spaghetti, I also noticed Him cringe or pull away when Kim tried to touch Him, Good I would be that

shoulder,when she needed it,And that dick when I gave it....So I,see he is high...

“Damn BruhYou missing out on this good ass spaghetti!”,Kim ,Your Granny recipe for that meaty sauce is the bomb!”

Kim said”Had You said something sooner,You said it does not matter...!”

Ryan shook his head,Pulled on that blunt,guzzled a glass of Cristal,and said”That was before?!”

Kim and Bliss exchanged WTF glances,I stirred the pot....

“Whatcha mean? Kim asked

“We just got done fucking....You didn't take your nasty ass to wash your ass,Or hands,Began fixing plates and shit!”

Kim looked pale and said”What?!”

“What My ass?....And then You think I’m eating your Granny’s secret sauce....with meat over spaghetti,And I’m gonna eat that shit?...Did We or did We not just fuck,And you neglected to tell Me you were on your period.....”

I looked at Her,So Did Bliss,Ryan kept talking,

“After we got done,I saw it and freaked the fuck out,Nasty ass said,A period Don't stop nothing but a period!”

I was rolling!.....”Damn Bruh tell Me you did not go down on that!”

“Nah,Because I would have straight choked Her the fuck out!” He laughed...Kim sat looking at Him like what has gotten into this fool!

Then Ryan goes on to talking about how women put period blood in foods such as Spaghetti,Meat Loaf,Or any type of barbecued dish! I took it a bit far

but said”Damn....See backhanded shit like that from sistas,I see Why bruhs are going to white women!”

This Ryan fool jumped up to double fist pound with Me,And said
“Helllllllll....Yeah.. That's Why I did it!””

Kim looked at his ass with a look of hurt,Yet,didn't seem surprised and said”Yeah,He married a white woman.....Thought I didn't know.....Huh... Well ,I do....Her pregnant ass is named Paisley.....And She is My Facebook Friend!....Ryan,looked as if He knew He had fucked up,But how did Kim know?...Better yet Why wasn't she upset,At that moment Kim's phone buzzed with a text message

“Hey Girl ,Just checking on you,And see how your boo thang is treating you,OAN ,Get some for the two of us,Hubby is out of town...But shit,even if He were....Three minutes would be all I can expect! Lol

Paisley

Kim text back,***Girl,Here in body,but mind seems on the other side of town...Distant....opinionated,I think He fucking another chick.....***

“I know the type ,Hell Ryan is black,I'm white..But He does not like Me hanging with black women,Said it reminds Him of ,the days in the projects,Funny due to the fact it was a black girl He left for Me,asked Him about her once,Got cussed out! Said hoodrats no potential....Anyway,Go get that man

Ryan looked pale ,.....He vomited all over the damn table!

Kim read the text messages out loud....then left Ryan ,Bliss and Me in the kitchen,wondering who was gonna clean up Ryan's vomit,Bliss and I got up,And made the decision,it wasn't gonna be either of us!

Kim

Beware of those who fall at your feet (They could be reaching for the corner of the rug)

I doubt very seriously You would believe what I did,But instead of ending it for good with Ryan,I let Him off the hook,that is until He went back home,Because after this rendezvous,I would never want to see or hear from him again...And neither would Paisley,Because the way He wrote Me off as nothing,But married another chick while We were going together,And moving Me out of the house,I had put money down on,Saying He needed space,So Bliss and I got a small apartment on campus,I slept with Ryan still,But when I saw via Facebook,not only had He secretly got married on Me,But was expecting a baby also....I flipped....then tonight talking all that shit.....It was time to go into the petty bitch I keep hidden so well,Such as I love Bliss,But I was gonna fuck Twan,When the time was right,He was sexy as hell and truth be told,I had some shit on Him that would not go over too well with Bliss if She knew,Such as I was not in the adulterer category alone...Just the thing was,Bliss didn't know He was married or had four outside children,And His wife was pregnant once again ,My cousin Patty told Me that Her Husband TJ and she had been at Twan and his wife Vanessa's house when Twan came trying to beg his way back home,But got pissed and left after TJ informed him that Vanessa was pregnant,So As I said when the

time is right,But right now,since Paisley was right about Ryan and his weak nookie,I left Him sprawled on the bed ,And went out to set My plan in gear....I drove until I saw the one man,I knew was not one to turn down a romp in the sack with Me,I saw his car and pulled in beside Him,And drove to the Jameson Inn,.....Once inside our room,He hugged Me and said”About time....”

I smiled and said “I know!”to Mar....Yea,While I plan to fuck Her “Next,”....I was fucking Her “Ex”...And it was all just something for Me to do...the rush of ALMOST,being caught with another chick's man,Plus I loved turning out men who are married,And knowing they are feening for Me,was a rush...And Mar,damn sure knew how to beg,borrow,steal In order for Me to have cash in My pockets,And I always made it worth his while,plus I would tell His wife everything....I knew how to stroke his ego,And threaten his domicile,After sex once,three times,I fell asleep,Not giving a fuck if Ryan was still drunk,or still at My place,I dozed off,I woke up a bit after,Mar,who had fallen asleep before Me,was in the bathroom...I heard sniffing and sneezing,I went to check the source,And caught Mar,snorting a white substance....I know one of two things,I knew He was welcome to that shit,And second....How could He fuck so good,if He was getting high?!....

Ryan

Drunken Mouth,The truth does tell!

Damn! I can't believe I got drunk,And blunted and let My mouth run like shit runs through a goose..But Kim gut punched My ass when She revealed she knew about...Not only that,But they were Facebook and Text buddies! Then Kim ,typical Kim read each text aloud,Because Paisley let it out that I don't

want her hanging with black women... And it's true....I grew up with a mom and two sisters, Never will I forget how I saw My Mom talk to My Dad as if He were Her kid,And then when My older Brother,Dempsey married this beautiful black girl named,Sidora,She was 5'4 brown completed,thick in all the right places,Simply sweet as pie,Before they got married,She was a manager of a clothing store started by her late Grandparents,It was called,"Emmy Wear Shine",it's a store that specializes In costume wear,Mostly a costume rental company,And it was a booming business,And Sidora,seemed to love it,But once she and Dempsey tied the knot,He was employed as manager of Greer Bank & Trust and together they could have and should have been a power couple,But after becoming pregnant after ,4 months of marriage,took her leave of absence,gave birth,And instead of going back to work,She instead turned into the "Gimme Gimme "girl,got pregnant again,three times more,And when Greer Bank & Trust closed,Dempsey was lucky enough to find a job as postmaster,At Greer Post Office,Making less money,and eventually had to file bankruptcy,My parents helped him find a house on Middleton Ave just two houses away from ours,Yet that fell through too because,Whenever Sidora was given the money to pay on the house,the payment never showed up,So Dempsey and My Dad,Made the basement into a two bedroom apartment like house,And Dempsey and his wife ,and four kids moved in...good thing they had all boys,so they could share the bedroom.I never in My life will forget the smell of hair being hot combed in the kitchen,every Saturday night,And hearing My Mom,and My sisters ,and now Sister in law ,clearing all from their minds huddled up,Watching Soap Operas,And listening out for the microwave,to serve as dinner,to My dad,and equally hard-working brother after a long day's work,But I had Kim on radar,and when She caught the signal,I have been on her payroll ever since....So the only job I needed was a blow

job....But even then I never introduced her to My family, Why should I?...She was never gonna a member of it anyway....And when I met Paisley, Who herself came from money....I put all the hopes Kim had until it was a calm moment, Asked again, Only to hear Her say..."Here is cab fare....And that is all I Am giving your ass...Let Me call Paisley and see if She, Your wife will donate to the N.A.A.C.P cause to get your ass home!"

By now I Am pissed, Because unbeknownst to Me at that time...While she was downstairs, She had already called a cab for Me, And it had just pulled up...Yea...this Ghetto chick had put Me out!"

Twan

That was Gangsta!

Ryan's white bread wannabe ass was so pissed that He left his phone behind, And being the type of brotha, I Am, I ran him down before the Uber could drive off...Plus, I had something to give Him, \$2000 that I had taken from Kim's stash, It was the least I could do , Plus I had a gut feeling that once He got home, He would be needing that money to get a room, Because, Paisley, for what I understood had moved back to Her parent's mini mansion, And unless Ryan had a lawn jockey uniform, and a lantern, He was not welcome, Kim had sent many pics to His wife, who thinks Kim is her friend...But Gotta admit, It was a gangsta move the way She did it though...But it made Her hella sexy in My eyes, And I hate to switch up on jump offs, But I think Bliss is not the one for Me to be playing, Kim was born with larceny in her heart and soul....And now since Aunt Sherry and Her Henchman husband had just left also...it was just us three, Bliss, Kim, And

Myself...So it was quiet,And that is the way I like it,No brats,Meaning,Ryan...Now I really had a chance to fill out Kim...to see what She was down for...Of course,I ain't that type of dog...I wasn't gonna try to get that ass tonight... Especially with Bliss in the house,But I Am gonna bounce in a few days,While Bliss is at work,Hate to sneak and leave,But that shit Vanessa did was only a start,She would not be suspicious while Ryan was here,Because Bliss actually thought the vandalism was due to Ryan,But More.Singfield knew the deal and Has been trying to blackmail My ass....You don't even wanna know,How I had to hit that,While Her old drunk ass hubby slept....I was disgusted at first,But Shiiiiiddd....That Old Ass lady had some moves...still...That wrinkly thigh on My shoulder...blaaah.....But so far She has shut her mouth,And My ass was not enduring that again....No way.... Hell ,I Am justtoo damn funny to even talk about,But now I know why so many Young cats around here bow down to this cranky ass old lady,They probably been on Her “Have secret,will keep” policy....But,I Am avoiding the old cougar as much as I can...And since Bliss has been acting all stank,Complaining to Me,About Kim and Ryan,...I know when She talks with Aunt Sherry,She put Me on that list too...But I Am not a freeloader,I Am Her houseguest,But truth be told,I tried to give Her a few dollars towards bills,But she blew Me off,Since I was leaving soon anyway...Yea...She wanted Me gone...And I was going,Straight into Kim’s bed...Kim....could be the Bonnie to My Clyde on the side,She had much love for Bliss....But I knew she was hating on the low,...In other words,She was shady....And We all know shady chicks make the freakiest side pieces!

Chablis

Identity Theft via social media

I sat looking blankly at email intended for, Yet had nothing to do with Me?..From a woman claiming that I was messing with Her husband....I simply pressed delete,each time one appeared,My guess is that someone,was trying to reach Kim through Me,Wouldn't be the first time...And from the little things I have been noticing about Kim,Such as I was not cool with Her toying with Paisley,She was Ryan's wife,And Kim was sleeping with Ryan,She was out of line,She was messing with Paisley's husband,Not the other way around.But judging from the loud ass argument Kim and Ryan had earlier before He stormed off,And If I knew Kim,And I did know Her...This was not gonna end good for Ryan,But that is what his ass gets....He was rude,I never cared for Him ,even before He got married to Paisley,But Kim was not exactly faithful to Him even back in the day,But it hurt Her that He married Paisley out of nowhere.But still that was Her business,I Am waiting with bated breath to see how this whole triangle was gonna fit the puzzle! Aunt Sherry also told Me to watch Kim,She feels something about Kim has changed,And with the way,She has been hiding,begging,And then broke again,But I also heard She is fucking with My ex Mar,On the sneaky tip...And She saw the way He tried to carry Me,Once I found out and confronted Him about His wife,Had I known about Her,I would not have even said Howdy to His ass... Because I wouldn't want it done to Me,Ryan was never gonna see anything in Kim or any other black woman,He made that clear before storming out of Here,I was just glad to See Him go....And now I could care less about Twan being here,Because other than dick Me down...But the next morning,It would be Me running from class to work,then work again,This shit has got to stop,Kim,just left with some dude She met

two weeks ago at McDonald's, And like a miracle, Twan was across the street, Helping Mrs. Singfield clean her attic.... I had My house to Myself for awhile, Loving it so much, I began looking for a one bedroom apartment for Myself, At least I was pondering leaving Kim in this one, She would come up with the rent somehow..... She would come up with the money.... either that or go back home to Her parents.... Which according to Aunt Sherry is where I should have left Her in the first place!

Ryan

Ass Out, And You've Been Served

The cab pulled up to My house, I paid Him, And got my bags, I opened the garage, My car was still parked inside, I left My bags in the garage, And got into My car...drove fast as I could to get to Paisley's parent's house, Once I got there, I sat in the car and put on My best jet lag impression, before tapping on the door, When Her younger brother, Zach opened the door, He scowled "Yea... What do You want?"

I knew then something was definitely fucking with his brain cells to ask Me that ?!

I pushed past his bony marijuana smelling ass and went into the den where Paisley's Mom, Andrea asked "Ryan?... Why are You here?!... You put My Baby through Hell?!"

"I just got back into town, Had to meet up with some clients, Paisley knows..."

She cut Me off "Yea.... We all saw Your work online!"

She pushed at least four pics of Me,in compromising positions with Kim,But Kim's face was blurred out,Then there were other pics,That showed Me on a site for Male prostitutes,Now that never crossed My mind...And had it done so...I wouldn't have needed Paisley,her money,or this bullshit,which is now My life.

There were text messages and Facebook messages from supposedly Me,Telling Paisley we were done,And I knew Kim was the reason for this....S he had temporarily suspended,my number,So they forwarded to Her,And She would answer back,yet it would be through My number....I Am so done with this dumb ass black bitch...once I get Paisley home,And cuss her ass out for dealing with people I told Her not to fuck with....Then threaten to leave her fat wobbly pasty ass ,Since She is pregnant,Can't slap her ass like I used to,But trust I Am saving up and counting the ass whippings I owed her after her six week check up,But for now I had to play the loving husband,Who has been set up....

I stood up to go into Paisley's bedroom,But she came out of it,I looked at her and no longer saw ,Love,Trust,or Fear....She walked up to Me and said"Get the fuck out....! I will have your belongings shipped to Your parents house!" "What you say?...Get your shit,We are going home now!"

"I Am home Ryan,I Am staying Here!"....

I felt like strangling this bitch....But the more I looked at Her,She looked different....She had given birth while I was gone,And didn't say shit!....How you gonna give birth to My child,who was gonna be My Trump card financially...And Not say Shit?!.....

"Ryan,get out!....This Restraining order evicts You from our home,And My life...So go back to the "Blissful "Chick you are so in love with,Or back to your gigolo job.....I Am done....!"

"Bitch....You can't keep Me away from My home,and child!"

“The house is no longer ours,My sister and her kids are staying there....A me as for your child.....,I miscarried after getting all those pics,I text you begging you to come Home,You replied How much You love this Bliss bitch!”

I was livid,Kim would throw Me and Bliss under the bus,When it was Kim I was with.....I could not even cry....I was pissed,This bitch in the midst of being with Me a few days,Had totally ruined My life plan.....Stupid bitch!...But now I was in the mood to tell Paisley just exactly what I have always felt,”Paisley,I never wanted a baby in the first place,You got pregnant thinking it would keep Me,Because as a man,I would never leave the mother of My child,Newsflash.....I was leaving anyway....just not empty handed,But seeing that there is no longer a meal ticket to tie Me to You...then I’m out!”And by the way.....Your friend Kim.....She sprung on this dick....Hell..since y'all are BFFs thought You knew she was the bitch I was dating when I married You,Yea....thought ya had a friend Huh?!”

She looked brokenhearted and I left Her standing there,Good riddance!....But Before going to set My foot in Kim’s ass,A process server,Walked up the driveway....”Mr.Ryan Benson,You have been served!”

Shit!!!!..... I was ass out....But I would think about that after I beat Kim’s ass down.....!

Chablis

When it all falls down

I must have dozed off because it was two hours later than I had first sat on the recliner to watch t.v,Kim was still out,Twan,I Am guessing was still

mooching and drinking with Mr.Singfield,But I stretched and went into the kitchen,I heard what I thought were Twan's footsteps,But since No one came in I let it go...hard like a hissing sound outside,As if someone was either pumping air,or releasing air from tires,Then I heard a loud tire squeal,And a woman screaming....I got up and ran to the door,In time to see A man in black being pulled off of a very pregnant woman....Paisley was white,But this lady,I had seen before....At the Chinese restaurant,At that time Kim had just gotten home,She screamed”Bliss!....What happened?!”I was trying to call 911 and cradle the young lady’s head in My lap,Beside her was a butcher knife,And as I looked,My tires were slashed,Then I noticed Kim grabbing two kids,Running towards their mom,Who as I say was visibly pregnant,But had slashed My tires,I heard grunting,Two guys managed to capture the man who had used a Louisville slugger bat on this woman....it was Ryan,Who looked at Kim,Realizing He had just attacked the wrong woman from behind,As the paramedics arrived,Twan emerged from The Singfield’s house,The two kids ran towards Twan screaming “Daddy!....He beat Mommy with a bat!””””

Daddy?...Did they say Daddy?,EMS arrived,And hurriedly put the lady on a gurney,to rush Her to the hospital....I still had questions....But so did the EMS....They asked,Patient name?”

Twan spoke “Vanessa Lavelle Grayson”

“Your Relationship to patient?”

Twan looked at Me then softly spoke”My Wife”.....

To Be Continued



Kennedy Brown is a native of Greer South Carolina,
She was Born Tuesday,November12,1968 ,at Greenville General
Hospital to Jayretta Mack Culbertson And Louis Gregory.
She is now a resident of Wellford South Carolina with Her
Husband,Keith.They are the parents of four Deirdre,Erich,Brandon
And Xavier.

She is the author of That's It! I Quit,I'm Movin'On,Keep
Movin'On!,Ain't Nobody's Business If I Do!

Kennedy Is an avid History buff,And Is a Sam Cooke Fan to the
Soul!!!

samcookefan68@gmail.com
KennedyIuvssam@yahoo.com



